

lang="en">

Husband is Great Black Belly

Table of Contents

1. [Synopsis](#)
2. [Prologue](#)

3. [Chapter 1 \(1.1\)](#)

4. [1.2](#)

5. [1.3](#)

6. [1.4](#)

7. [Chapter 2 \(2.1\)](#)

8. [2.2](#)

9. [2.3](#)

10. [Chapter 3 \(3.1\)](#)

11. [3.2](#)

12. [3.3](#)

13. [3.4](#)

14. [Chapter 4 \(4.1\)](#)

15. [4.2](#)

16. [4.3](#)

17. [Chapter 5 \(5.1\)](#)

18. [5.2](#)

19. [5.3](#)

20. [Chapter 6 \(6.1\)](#)

21. [6.2](#)

22. [Chapter 7 \(7.1\)](#)

23. [7.2](#)

24. [7.3](#)

25. [Chapter 8 \(8.1\)](#)

26. [8.2](#)

27. [8.3](#)

28. [Chapter 9 \(9.1\)](#)

29. [9.2](#)

30. [9.3](#)

31. [9.4](#)

32. [Chapter 10 \(10.1\)](#)

33. [10.2](#)

34. [10.3](#)

35. [10.4](#)

36. [Chapter 11 \(11.1\)](#)

37. [11.2](#)

38. [Chapter 12 \(12.1\)](#)

39. [12.2](#)

40. [12.3](#)

41. [Chapter 13 \(13.1\)](#)

42. [13.2](#)

43. [Chapter 14 \(14.1\)](#)

44. [14.2](#)

45. [14.3](#)

46. [Chapter 15 \(15.1\)](#)

47. [15.2](#)

48. [15.3](#)

49. [Chapter 16 \(16.1\)](#)

50. [16.2](#)

51. [16.3](#)

52. [Chapter 17 \(17.1\)](#)

53. [17.2](#)

54. [17. 3](#)

55. [Chapter 18 \(18.1\)](#)

- 56. [18.2](#)
- 57. [Chapter 19 \(19.1\)](#)
- 58. [19.2](#)
- 59. [Chapter 20 \(20.1\)](#)
- 60. [20. 2](#)
- 61. [20.3](#)
- 62. [Chapter 21 \(21.1\)](#)
- 63. [21. 2](#)
- 64. [21.3](#)
- 65. [Chapter 22 \(22.1\)](#)
- 66. [22.2](#)
- 67. [Chapter 23 \(23.1\)](#)
- 68. [23.2](#)
- 69. [23.3](#)
- 70. [Chapter 24 \(24.1\)](#)
- 71. [24.2](#)
- 72. [24.3](#)
- 73. [24.4](#)
- 74. [Chapter 25 \(25.1\)](#)
- 75. [25.2](#)
- 76. [25.3](#)
- 77. [25.4](#)
- 78. [Chapter 26 \(26.1\)](#)
- 79. [26.2](#)
- 80. [26. 3](#)
- 81. [26.4](#)
- 82. [Chapter 27 \(27.1\)](#)
- 83. [27.2](#)
- 84. [27.3](#)
- 85. [Chapter 28 \(28.1\)](#)
- 86. [28.2](#)
- 87. [28.3](#)
- 88. [Chapter 29 \(29.1\)](#)
- 89. [29.2](#)

90. [29.3](#)
91. [Special Chapter : Kang Yu revenge \(1 \)](#)
92. [\(2\)](#)
93. [Special Chapter : Ge Ge and Fu Ma \(The Princess and Prince\) \[1\]](#)
94. [\[2\]](#)

Synopsis

Novel title : 老公是腹黑大人

Author : 犬犬

Female lead : Ou Yang Miao Miao

Male Lead : Kang Yu (Ai Xin Jue Luo aka prince)

Synopsis:

“You can think Man as dog, but can you make dog to be man?”

“If the future love rival is a dog, how can I live?”

“You have terrible ugly hand writing, better go home and practice, if in the future you need to sign into “my spouse” Column (Marriage certificate), I would be embarrassed.”

“Stupid, didn’t you see that I tried to bribe my future mother in law? Such big bed you are sleeping like this, later on I need to buy bigger bed so that I would be able have space to sleep!”

“Listen, You got my permission to love me. But, it should be until the hairs grow white (until death do us part) or else you don’t have any option to choose!”

In addition of above, Ou Yang Yan Yan— The twin sister of the female lead has observed Kang Yu : Big sister, Kang Yu seems to have good eyes color alike healthy yellowish clear urine, but when looked at your eyes it alike clear saliva dirt with mud eyes.

Although the way of describing are shocking, but it really right. hence, the gorgeous female lead Ou Yang Miao Miao is abducted....

This novel might typical rom-com genre filled with many funny things.

Female lead is Ou Yang Miao Miao who is dog lover, class leader, very good in academic.

Male lead is Kang Yu who hates dog so much (because particular reason) and the poorest thing, his love rival is a dog.

This novel is Happy Ending. of course should HE since Azurro dislike OE or sad ending.

Prologue



VS



Prologue

A Ring that Price Equal to Tibetan Mastiffs

Kang Yu and I not only studied at same junior high school, same class but we even were sharing at same table, moreover we also the legendary puppies love waves, Well just say we were on that sort of circumstances. We were dating for nine years, finally on 14 February 2004, Kang Yu proposed marriage to me.

Kang Yu is not Shanghainese, while my mother is typical middle-aged Shanghainese woman who have different mindset of seeing the difference in cultures, so my mother had strongly opposing he and I dating each others.

What to do? Fait accompli? Elope? Forget it, I am not type of person who would do such foolish thing, the most I could do “delaying” action to solve all problems, I hope during the time my mother would open her mind and heart.

For this matter, Kang Yu really had deep thought of it even he said nothing, but I knew he types of man who cared his face utmost.

During that time Kang Yu was trainee pilot, He was serving at one of the most leading airline for German Airline LTU company, for Pilot with Chinese-nationality, this company extremely very hard and strict, almost impossible being tenured.

Although he has ever promised to give me happiness, but still my mother was waiting for his improvement.

Perhaps Kang Yu wanted to express and show his strong will to fulfill his promised completely, or he might just types of man who just wanted to protect his face, after dragging for almost one year which was February 14, 2005. He bought me a gold ring with one carat diamond which he used to propose me again for the second time.

When saw this one carat diamond gold ring, I could feel my brain numb.

Or I did it because Cartier brand!

“How... How much money?” I not dared to take it, there was rumbling sound in

my mind, even I felt my eyes as if pierced by the shine of the diamond gold ring which could make me blind.

“It cheaper than in Shanghai, I asked my senior bought it from Switzerland, seventeen millions.”

“What?” I went crazy and almost slapped down all the food in the table.

My reaction just making Kang Yu frowning, “Do you dislike it?”

I shook my head, in this time how could I dare to say I dislike it, it just... just...

“Where the money come from?” He still in training period, even though the salary quite high, however he still need to buy bigger house, as additional to cover the daily expenses, so how could he get seventeen millions.

“Borrowed!”

“What!” This time I was crazily screaming out loud.

“You quiet little bit!”

“You are moron! Borrowed money only to buy ring, and the expensive ones, did you have crashed your brain to the plane?”

“.....”

“Return, faster returns it into cash! Now, immediately!” Crazily I held tightly into Kang Yu’s collar shirt.

“I will return it!”

“P***cursing word), how to pay it, using your body work as Host^{1]}! Even though he has the look to be Host, because he is so handsome since he was young.

As it predicted Kang Yu not bear to hear what she said, his face turned darken, he showed extremely killing aura, “Just said you “Want” or “Not Want”!”

Using my analogy he is exploding to the level of Tibetan Mastiff.

“I know you want to get my mom favors, but there is really no need for it.”

“Want or Not Want!” Kang Yu looked as if the Tibetan Mastiff which showing its fang.

“.....”

Persistent for about three minutes, finally I took it, because I perfectly understood him very well, although material thingy cannot really represent everything but for my mother, it could serve as medicine.

But still my heart was feeling unease.

“This ring could buy some dogs...” I am dog lover since I was young.

“.....”

“It could buy Tibetan Mastiffs!”

Kang Yu veins was beating and jumping.

I was unaware, seeing the flashy bling² of the ring, continue nagging, “If not buying Tibetan Mastiff, but still able to buy at least eight Alaskan Malmute.”

Kang Yu spoke with chilly voice, “You want dogs or you want me!”

I was immersed, calculating how many doggies I could buy with seventeen millions and on reflex I said: “Dog...”

Kang Yu freaking angry, smashed the table.

I was shocked, then just realized I had made mistake, and I had done serious mistake which caused his anger flaming, burn to his head.

“No...I didn’t mean...aiya, you don’t go ah!”

Kang Yu was smashing to open the door, but quickly he coming back, because here his office room.

I just was about to say sorry to him but he is faster one step than me, “Go home, write hundred times that *I am more important than dog*, so then I will forgive you!”

“.....”

“Or else, I will go and kidnap your Cai Xi, nonstop torturing it, and I will be torturing it in front of you!”

Cai Xi is my dog which I pet for eleven years, a type of German shepherd dog, My beloved lovely dog.”

“.....” so cold! What this mean, an appropriate step to solve problems^{2]}? but no matter how to say, this ring really worth and able to buy Tibetan Mastiffs and eight Alaskan malmute, the ring finally able to make my mother changed her view and attitude towards Kang Yu.

On February 14, 2006, both of us officially have been dating for eleven years and Kang Yu finally became official pilot and the next day, He and I finally become husband and wife, legally.

One week later, the wedding ceremony decided on November, it said that year was double spring, and also a decade which also rare good year to get married.

I born in dog year, I like dog and that year was dog year.

In dog year, I am who born under Dog zodiac, got married.

But... but...

I had done little bit an impulsive action that was... I took the ring to pawn for cash and then I bought dog.

Still... still...

I even more afraid if Kang Yu really torturing Cai Xi.

Well, every time I see the ring, I hint myself :

‘It is one Tibetan Mastiff, it is eight Alaskan Malmutes.’

‘It is one Tibetan Mastiff, it is eight Alaskan Malmutes.’

‘It is one Tibetan Mastiff, it is eight Alaskan Malmutes.’

‘It is one Tibetan Mastiff, it is eight Alaskan Malmutes.’

Aiya... I knew this man very well.

Note:

1] 牛郎 niu lang : cowherd boy, but in here means male prostitute or Host

2] 对症 dui Zheng 药 Xia Yao : to prescribe the right medicine for an illness (Idiom)

Chapter 1 (1.1)

Chapter 1 Wang Ye^{1]} Come on Stage

Part 1 (one)

My name is Ou Yang Miao Miao, a Shanghainese, my family financial situation is very good^{2]}, other than mother and father, I still have twin younger sister called—Ou Yang Yan Yan, Father is businessman, while Mother is forensic investigator, it still count as very ordinary household.

11 September 1995, Monday, that year I was 14 years old, because I have studied earlier one year so I was in eighth grade (Junior High School second year), in that day, I met him.

I still remembered clearly on the day I met him, the weather misty, cloudy and moderate rain, all the day was no sun, dusky, and that day also the Memorial Day for Mao Ze Dong^{3]}, so that our daily morning exercise was cancelled. We were staying at class listened to the radio broadcast which no other than broadcasting about the great Chairman Mao Ze Dong's life, the specific, I really forgot because...I fell asleep.

He was during that time appeared.

His name called Kang Yu, he originally came from the Northeast China, he also has awesome X name which so incredible—Ai Xin Jue Luo, in Han language interpret as Gold, regarding of this legendary story about this surname which is omnipresent^{4]}, it rare to find people who has this kind of surname. If he were living during the Qing dynasty, he might someone to be the descendant of Prince Zai Feng, who was an orthodox^{5]} prince.

But for us who were born in early of nineties students, Ai Xin Jue Luo... this surname was not really clear, because during that time the novel about Qing Dynasty or the dramas weren't much like today. Moreover during our time, we were like to watch Black Cat Detective^{6]} or The Flower Child Lunlun^{7]}, Doraemon or any other types of these cartoons, animated series. About the Qing Dynasty dramas, even there were people like it but not as many as today.

When the teacher was writing his name on blackboard, afterwards sounded as if the voices of troops coming and then I woke up.

Ai Xin Jue Luo?

My first response was, Oh My, how could this brat has longer name than mine, who has two character surname, the important things, when there was examination he would take longer time only to write his name.

Just my thought, I wiped the saliva on the edge of my corner mouth, while looking at the front stage where a boy was standing straight.

Uh... no need to wipe the saliva, wiping one more time was no use because it started to drool again.

The masculine boy, the words so openly appeared, perhaps I shouldn't use *masculine boy* this word, but I should say it, because he has that characters which more suitable, five features of facial feature, wheat color skin tone, especially his pair of eyes, it bright and piercing and types showing the pride to arrogant aura, makes him looked offensively conspicuous. A person who born in 1980, compare to my classmate he older by one year and compare to me he is older two years.

Who's letting me entered the school so early by one year, or because of the changing school matters, still studied in Junior High second year by the age of 16, or perhaps because of his origin from Northeast, with height almost 175, coming to Shanghai, this southern city boys which were still in Junior High and haven't well grown, appeared as if a group of noisy doggies even they more alike puppies but still especially out-loud.

My saliva was dripping down, earlier I had forgotten to wipe, perhaps because of my strong vision, he found out, his eyes turned to look directly into my eyes.

During that moment, strangely my brain seems to recall thousand and hundred doggies barking voices, as if singing with melody of—*where spring is? Where is the spring? Spring is in the mountain of jade forest, here is safflower, here is green grass, and also little yellow oriole singing voice, li la la li la la li, tick li la li la li.....*

(Song Lyric)

I didn't understand what that would be representing, until my adult life, finally I came to understand what was it represent?

That was represent——I, blooming in love (Falling in love).

Standing face to face, both of us seem not have any intension to blink eyes, while my brain still played that song *where is spring?* Countless time, but the last part of li la la li la la li la replaced by wang wang wang (barking voice)....

I felt want to hit my head with hammer, while my heart kept on crying: Stop it, still singing.

He probably surprised with my action, hitting my own head, his brows wrinkled, I guessed he might think this girl perhaps have mental problems.

In situation where I was crazily hitting my head, I completely didn't hear what teacher said, teacher has done with introducing him, and then looked at me, "Class leader..."

I still hitting my head, hoping all the melodies vanish from my brain, didn't want to hear any.

"Class leader..."

I still didn't hear anything.

"Ou Yang, what are you doing, teacher is calling you, Ou Yang...." A classmate who sat in front and at same row with me, knocked my table.

"Ah?"

My classmate rolled eyes, "Teacher is calling you."

Note:

1] 王 Wang 父 Ye : Your Royal Highness.

2] 家 Jia 境 Jing 小 Xiao 康 Kang : 家 Jia 境 Jing means the family circumstance, whiles 小 Xiao 康 Kang while means comparatively good living standard and prosperity.

3] 毛 Mao 主 Zhu 席 Xi : Chairman Mao, Mao Ze Dong who was the Chinese Communist Leader.

4] 铺 Pu 天 Tian 盖 Gai 地 Ti : Hiding the sky and covering the earth (idiom)

5] 正 Zheng 统 Tong : Zheng Tong emperor who ruled China from 1435 to

1449, his ruled style was Right governance and Obedient to Heaven which lead to orthodox (Right, True, and straight)

6] 黑Hei 猫 Mao 警 Jing : Black Cat Detective is Chinese animation television series produced by the Shanghai animation film studio, airing from 1984-1987.

7] 花Hua仙 Xian 子Zi : The Chinese name for Japanese animation series. Hana no ko lun lun is the original title in Japanese and the English is called as The flower Child Lunlun. It was airing on 1979.

1.2



Chapter 1 Wang Ye Come on Stage

Part 2 (Two)

Immediately I woke up, confused then stood up, screamed: "Arrived!"

It seems the voice too loud and suddenly the entire class broke with laughing.

The teacher frowning: "This is the new transfer student, let him to have seat beside you."

That time I was sitting at last row since I grew very well, little taller compare with others and fortunately my beside still have an empty seat, hurried I cleaned up all the rubbish in my next table's drawer, the seed shell, the plums, and also the tissue paper which I used to clean my nose, moreover there still a big size *poached egg*, I couldn't help anything about it since I have rhinitis, care no with three seven is twenty one^{1]}, still hurried clean all the things, with the speed of light and then I scratching my head.

"Teacher, everything is done."

The entire class was laughing again.

Then, he was walking toward me, looking at me, and then looked at the drawer which I just cleaned, suddenly he frowning, but said nothing, waiting until the class ended, he whispered to my ear, "Class leader, you seem to forget about taking away your *personal private belonging*."

Personal private belonging?

Hurried I looked into his drawer.

Ugh...I forgot to take away my sanitary protection pads.

I hurried to take away that sanitary protection pads wrapped in pinky packaging, wishing I could swallow it right into my stomach.

For the rest of day, I didn't dare to look at him because I embarrassed to death.

That day, he transferred into Shanghai Hong Qiao Junior High School, becoming my classmate and also sitting beside me.

Now, to call back the memory, this brat named Kang Yu with surname Ai Xin Jue Luo, he could be called as my nemesis in my life, because since I met him later on, all the shameful things that happen to me nonstop, and one to others were more than outrageous, extremely humiliating, I really beg to God, Buddha, Avalokitesvara, I vowed, I always be smart child before I met him—absolutely.

On one blink of eyes, only by a week after he transferred into my school, he has made friend with all the males' classmate in my class. Perhaps because of his clear and bright northeast characters and also his royal descendant Manchu, the boys gave him nickname—Wang Ye.

This *Wang Ye* really jokes for me.

It was lunch time, our school not really has any canteen, originally we had, however in order to expand the school teaching room it had demolished, leaving only the kitchen, inside there was steaming box, every day when we are arriving at school, our bento (lunch box) are put inside that steaming box, when noon arrived, we still could have our hot meals and it really convenient.

My relation and fate with others are always good, inside the class the five top, all are my good friends and also— always be friend from we were kindergarten until middle school, same class.

Their performance and grade always in top five, while I only have sixth, but not only that, inside the class all the cadres are my best fellow sisters. My own twin little sister and I weren't at the same school because I registered into my mother's family name while my little sister was taking my father's. We were not at same area, so we were also took different school, anyway whether with her or not, it was still same, she loved to bully me.

Girls, like to sit at same table when having meals, while eating we were also chatting about dramas, the anime or cartoon, during that time, we haven't had any gossip or infotainment these kind of showed, we were so innocent back then, three eight^{2]} used the most as the military demarcation line, absolutely would not get turn to fail wear on our head (means San Ba in here not refer as gossip stuffs). The others advantage having lunch together was, giving those

food we hate into others box and taking all the food we like from others box, kill two birds with one stone, but I not picky with food and my eating pace also the fastest.

My mother said, I am types of person who speaks fast, eat fast, even when it comes about excreta (feces) also the fastest, it really true, but the very last one, I still need to maintain my weight because people still difficult to avoid encounter constipation.

Afterall having lunch together, of course should sitting together, using and sharing the same table, so that my table always contribute for it, initially my table has not occupied but Kang Yu now sitting and sharing the table with me so the best thing I could do just asking he away, the reason was girls talk, boys not allowed to hear.

He didn't have any objection; after all he has his own friends who eat together with him.

One of my best friend, Xiao Fan, her full name is Fan Jun, she is very petit girl but she has very hot temper, so we all called her little pepper (Xiao La Jiao)—small, spicy, delicate, hey hey, spicy to the point choking, and her dishes for lunch all are very spicy, I like spicy, her mother cooked dishes really superb.

Xu Ying is small eyes, born beautifully with curly hair, her grade always so good until now, I always believe she perhaps has chip inside her brain because she always gets first rank, but, she eats so slowly, I love to help her eating, if I didn't do so, she might still eating after the noon class finished.

Liu Li Jun, from the appearance, could only consider as good-looking, but pair of eyes alike phoenix hanging, very similar to fox, so sometimes, I thought she so enchanting, kind of smiles, feeling so lively, maybe because she is the most funny one in our group.

Still, she is the person that I thought as super power girl because her highest position— The group leader of the secretary league.

There are also twins, have good-looking appearance, according to Xiao Fan, they are types that being chasing from childhood, an identical twin, very identical, the big sister called Yu Wen Jing while the little sister called Li Wen Yi, we have been together for long time, so only by closed my eyes I could able

differentiate which one is big sister and little sister, one is followed mother's surname while another followed father's surname.

As for me, to be honest, I have an ordinary look, but luckily I have very beautiful eyes, big and bright, unfortunately, this strong point is covered with thick glasses, I felt my soul alike crashing into window, distorted, bigger and beautiful useless, grief!

Note :

- 1] 三 San 七 Qi 二 er + Shi — Yi : Three seven is Twenty one (idiom), the actual matter.
- 2] 三 San 八 Ba : Nonsense (slang words), Three Eight parallel, border between North and South Korea or similar to US and Soviet zones.

1.3

Chapter 1 Wang Ye Come on Stage

Part 3 (Three)

“Miao Miao why you are eating tomato scramble egg again!” Xiao Fan who saw me opened my lunch box with same dishes, her face showed disgust.

Oh, I have ate tomato scramble egg for weeks, indeed people who see it would feel sick, but I could not do anything, my mother is forensic investigator, every day she is busy with death bodies while my dear father is busy earning money, at home there is a little sister who is lazier than me, trying to do simple but also nutritious dish, only tomato scramble egg my option.

“If you feel like such way, you give me your rib dishes.” I stared at her lunch box, which containing meat.

“You are on purpose.” She said but still gave ribs for me.

This is so called best friend, I really moving and inside my heart I have thought, Xiao Fan, wait until I grew up, earning much money, I would repay your kindness, poor you, every time you give me your food, I caused you grow N longer time, you with 148cm height really one of good person.

Perhaps I have the thought, but still I ate the rib and almost choked of it, and deliberately taking others food into my own lunch box and eating it into my stomach, really have a good meal.

Tomato and egg as if the decoration in my white rice.

While eating, I saw Kang Yu and few of boys went out into field and playing football, until I heard someone said, “Wang Ye (Royal Highness) this time you being gate keepers.”

He replied hm.

Suddenly I felt curious, why they called him Wang Ye, this matter could not blame on me, I hard to remember people nickname, moreover there also time when I forget about people names, most of time I wrong in naming or calling others, especially for boys, most of them are calling each other with “wei”, when first day he transferred to school, teacher had introduced him but I had forgotten his name completely, so I had called him *wei* for more than weeks.

Hence, I was so foolish and said: "So his surname is Wang? Why called him Ye. Hm... I understand now he called Wang Ye, this name really heard so high level, no matter how I heard it, really own higher "status" compare to others, but why they don't call him Wang Ye Ye, this much direct!"

As I finished with my words, I heard laughing voice, all my best friends began to burst laughing hilarious.

Perhaps I talked too loud, or maybe Kang Yu has very sharp ears, short after I finished, he glared at me, that eyes showed devil looked.

I blinked my eyes couple times, was I said something wrong? I looked at all my best fellow sisters and him, countless time.

And then, he walked toward me.

I lifted my head, ugh...his height such threatening.

He narrowed his eyes, I could see his throat moving and then the straightly said: "Class leader, there is rice in your face."

Subconsciously I touched my face, my face really has rice, I stretched my tongue out and licked it, inserted the rice into my mouth. I could not waste foods because the farmer uncle labors hard and have put so much effort for it.

Well, if I tried to think again, my movement really similar to frog.

"Class leader...." He called.

What's more, does my face still has rice, I touched it one more time, but nothing, I so palpitating with fear looking at him, while he looked at me with such intimidating glared.

"You...really blunt!" after he done, he turned his back, he walked out from the class, a person who name I did not know said, "Forget about it, even our names the class leader hard to memorized, as long as the man's name, she would forget it right after she heard it, moreover it's your..."

Waiting until they walked away, I just came to react, stared with wide-opened eyes, and then I vent angers to my best friends (fellow sisters) said, "He.... He... called me blunt!!!"

None of them were comforting me, but they were using kind of glance, looking

at me—you are really blunt.

What heck! What a heck!

“Miao Miao, he has been here for one week!” Xiao Fan said.

“You and he are sitting and sharing same table for a week!” Xu Ying said.

“Your ability to memorized things are really shocked to dumbfound.” Liu Li Jun said.

I frown, I was not understood what they said?

Xiao Shuang (Little pair) and Da Shuang (big pair) were taking out book from Kang Yu’s drawer, it covered two big words—Kang Yu.

I stared for moment, “Is this his name?”

They were nodding and showed pitiful expression of my IQ.

I put dried laugh, they were also followed laugh—very fake ones.

As the result, I memorized his name, for the first time, I have remembered a boy name, for me even the boys that have been at the same class since first year, none of them I remembered.

Waiting until the noon class ended, he came and sat down, I really wanted to say sorry to him, but after I thought he had called me blunt in front of my fellow sisters, I hard to forgive him, therefore, I pointed to the name of his book, “Your name are so old-fashioned.”

He used that frightening glance to stare at me.

But I felt there was pleasure of revenge feeling, so I not bother him.

Well, who knew that he replied, “Your name is more old fashion than mine!”

I fire up, “Kang Yu....” I called his name, I was preparing to curse him, but when our eyes met, I stared blank, froze, in his eyes I could see happy feeling radiance.

Why happy, did he happy because my name seems to be more old fashion than his?

Teacher came, I did not dare to burst curse words, so I looked at my own name.

Ugh...indeed so old fashion.

Huhuhuhu.....when studied in primary school was not really practice writing well, repent^{1]}, repent.

However, he and I have squabbled to certain points, he is my most hated person in my black list no 2, while no1 is all belong the people who are eating dog meat and killing dog.

Note :

1] 悔 hou 不 bu 当 dang 初 chu : to regret one's past deeds (idiom)

1.4



Chapter 1 Wang Ye Come on Stage

Last Part

Less than one month, he has changed position to the no 1.

All because I was experiencing something that so embarrassing, moreover this time extremely shameful things if I flashed things back, I thought I should dig hole and jump in, better off.

That time was Friday and routine cleaning, I was responsible for sweeping floor, while Kang Yu was assigned a same job with me, basically this types of stuffs just perfunctory only, taking a broom leisurely sweep more than fine, anyway the floor was already dirty, as long as the chalk stain on the blackboard surface are cleaned, teacher won't pay attention to others.

But that day, my *best friend*^{2]} was coming, it was during lunch time after I had popsicle (ice lolly), I felt my stomach so in pain, but I was class leader so I should be the role model, I could not gave an order to ask other do it for me, I should be composed~~~ composed~

But.....

Aiyooo~~~it really extremely hurt.

I had cold sweat, my hand has already shivered grabbing the broom, being woman really pity, every month should bleeding much blood, the new replace the old^{3]} is fine, but why should it should pain so much, the second day, the tendency was frightening, I have almost divulge, so pathetic, please not tormenting me anymore.

I was secretly praying for my monthly best friend quickly stops, so I could finish sweeping, immediately I took the cotton padded to enshrine and worship to You, also molasses, and also jujube, and also....

It pained me to death!! My face felt as if twisted together.

At that moment, Kang Yu took the dust pan and walked toward me, I raised my

head, pretending nothing happen and laughed, “Are you finished sweeping?”

He nodded, he examined me closely, “Are okay?”

I hurried swaying my head, stood straightly, “Nothing, I am extremely fine.” Unspoken things I meant: slob, go away, go away!

I took the broom and really serious when sweeping the floor, sweeping to the level fly upward.

“Do you feel unwell?” He was still asking at my back.

“Nothing!” unspoken speech: good your fart, because in front of you, I could not say things.

I have strong and stubborn characters, especially in front of man, even I had been hit till death, I would never shown my weakness.

Therefore, he was walking in front of me, perhaps because I bend down my waist, he could not see my face, so that he lower his body at same level of mine, I did not want to show myself that enduring the pain, endured until gritting my teeth and biting my mouth, suddenly when turned back, accidentally stepped on dust pan, crooked the angle, then felt down.

Felt down then just felt down but the problem I was wearing skirt, lying on the floor surface really not graceful, pair of legs were opened, directly facing him, the skirt flipped over, I didn’t pay attention, until I sensed little bit cool.

Until when I got my focus, everything was late, the things that should not leak had leaked—including the yellow panty and the small circle of red spot.

My brain seems be empty, I forgot to crawl and stand up, or just flipped back my skirt, or just closed my legs, but I just dumbfounded looking at him.

Tomato scramble eggs—this perhaps the only word that I could say to describe things.

Merely after seeing, he finished *enjoyed*, he also stupidly looking at me, and then his cheeks turned red, and then his ears turned red, all over his face turned red, suddenly he stood up and turned back.

Me, I didn’t do things to react, I was completely screwed up.

Pain, I did not feel it anymore, the rest only awkward.

Awkward to the point that I wanted to faint immediately.....

I heard Xiao Fan calling voice, Xiao Shuang and Da Shuang screaming, and also the others fellow sisters screaming voices, but I could not give any reaction, I even thought if much better if I did not need to awake.

And then, I won't ever want to eat tomato scrambled egg anymore.

And also, KangYu glorious glanced finally ascended him to be the most hated person no 1 in my black list, in my life I don't think there would be others to replace him in the list.

Then,....

God, please you allowed me to die!!!

Note :

2] 好 hao朋 peng 友 you : Best friend (slang) menstruation

3] 新 Xin 陈 chen 代 dai 谢 xie : the new replace the old (idiom), metabolism (biology)

Chapter 2 (2.1)

Chapter 2

Pee Pee^{1]} incident

“Tomato scrambled egg” after this incident, for more than two months I had to hide whenever I met Kang Yu, during the class, I just stared at my books, straight looking at there, I did not dare to look at him.

Because seeing him, I suddenly turned to be awkward, I, who was in puberty, I could feel my innocent had completely destroyed, and feeling so ashamed to meet people.

While Kang Yu acted as if nothing happened, he had forgotten this matter earlier.

Hence, I thought things had passed for such long time, I thought it not needs to keep it on my heart anymore, just thought it as one of the worsen nightmare.

Hiks hiks, I felt this kind of thought was good idea, shortly after I felt more relax.

Things came ups!

In the afternoon when I having my lunch, I was so excited^{2]} going to canteen and took my lunch box, right after I was turned to corner, suddenly I was hit someone’s head which was Kang Yu.

When the time I knew that he was the person, my moods immediately sink down, although I had tried to manage my mind to get over, but after met the real person, I still felt embarrassed.

I am type of strong person, I swayed my head and kept on walking, perhaps turned my back and jumped, this kind of things I could not do it, therefore I did something impudent, lifting my leg and kicked him.

Kang Yu did not expect I would do such things, after being kicked, he muffled.

After kicked the person, I even yelled, “Get out!”

Kang Yu stuffed after being kicked and yelled by me.

He didn’t let me to pass, so I stubborn pushed him, and then I dashed out with high spirit.

Huff, no other way, I^{3]} am types of this person.

Until I walked quite far, finally I dared to take a glance at him, even I used one leg to kick him but I put all my strength, it seems I was not kicked him till injured, but realized Kang Yu had already at my back.

His expression was darker compare to Justice Bao^{4]} really ugly.

Once our eyes met, I was scared and run away.

I was running and unexpectedly he was chasing right at my behind.

I was scared unable to figure out, as it turned out he might want to take revenge, so that I put more effort and strength to run faster, but he also kept on chasing me, those people who saw us might think we were crazy, one at front while another at back were running and chasing at sport field.

Run and run, laps by laps.

Those people who didn’t know what was going on might be thought we were practicing for 400m spirited run.

Initially I run very well, but gradually the endurance level has came to the end, barely run motionless, turned back Kang Yu almost chased after me.

At this moment, I got alarmed, starting to get emotional, shouting while running, “Anyone comes and help me, murder, Kang Yu hit girl!!!”

Finished shouting, Kang Yu caught up on me, he patting my shoulder.

I shocked and jumped, turned around and kicked him again.

Kang Yu seems to have predicted, he dodged and then he caught my hand, forcing me to stop.

I have no other choice but stopped, I did really think he might hit me, loosen my hand, quickly squatting to the ground, embraced head.

But waiting until half day, he didn't do anything.

I moved my hand, raised my head, seeing him frowning and glaring at me, "Who said I want to hit you? I don't hit girl."

"So, why did you chase after me?"

"So, why were you running?"

Nonsense, I kicked you, was I not suppose to run?

But I really found it embarrassing to say sorry, so I just said, "I exercise, can't I?"

Well, I just seek for reason, just now I even shouting he killed and hit but now I reneged.

He seems to be too lazy to argue with me and then he said, "I have something to tell you."

"Oh! You can tell me now." I squatted on the ground and gave respond.

He made ckckck sound before, when I squatting he also crouched down, and then said, "That..... actually that day I did not see anything."

Saw nothing? I haven't given any respond, wait until I able to react, I recalled, his face that beet red alike monkey butt, "You spouted nonsense, you clearly.... Or else how could your face turned red?"

He was caught by my words, he scratching his head, his face also turned red.

"Well, you don't need to waste time anymore, even if, I have been seen, you are not less any meat."

Does...does...does this could even consider as comforting?

"Just think that I really sorry for you, you had kicked me, so we called it even."

I did not dare to say couldn't, if now I rethink, he didn't intend to, but because I was so angry so I vent on him, well, no matter how to say I was wrong, I even kicked him, talked about victim, he was also the victim.

But I am girl, in my puberty period when I understand about difference between men and women, experiencing embarrassing incident, I felt bad for myself, no matter how to think of it, he was the person benefit at my expense.

But entangled with this kind of incident, unexpectedly I turned to be narrow-minded person.

After all he had apologized; this thing I should just let it go.

“I didn’t injure you, right.” Things need to be concerned still necessary.

He nodded, “The cloth quite thick, never mind.”

“So...so...just let it be!” I stood up. I had run for long time, I have hungry already, I go for lunch!”

I walked to canteen, Kang Yu followed at my back.

“Why are you following me?”

Kang Yu glared at me, “You want to eat, so do I no need to eat? Who has caused me running while I haven’t have my food and hungry?”

I shrink my neck, nagging in my heart, who asked you to chase after me.

After we got our lunch box, both of us came back to class, the noon class would start immediately, those fellow sisters had already finished eating, no one companied me, so I just got back to my own seat and together having lunch with Kang Yu.

Note:

1] 嘘 Xu 嘘 xu 事 shi 件 jian : 嘘嘘 is feminine slang/sound for kids when they are going to pee.

2] 蹦 beng 蹦 beng 跳 tiao 跳 tiao : bouncing and vivacious, excited

3] 老娘 Lao Niang: my old mother, I (slang), midwife

4] 包公 Bao Gong : Justice Bao, the legendary and respected as the symbol of justice in China

2.2

Chapter 2

Pee Pee incident

After finished with lunch, on the noon class, we had sport as the first subject. I hurried to change my clothes.

During that time the sport trousers, girls hate it, because it difficult to wear, while the color was blue ash feeling so rustic. While both side of the trousers had snow white color border, no matter how to match it with other clothes, it still terrible, so that most of the girl were wearing the trouser during sport class and change after class ended.

When arrived at the sport field, all student were queue, and then count off themselves, the sport committee member should check the outfit before teacher coming, those who were not wearing trousers or sport shoes should leave the line and punished standing at beside.

After finished checking, teacher has arrived.

The teacher seeing me and smiled, I perplexed.

After that, he said to the entire student, "Today they were two students, both of them really made me so happy, to one surprise they were taking advantage during lunch break, practicing 400m running distance, while the speed of running really fast so that I decided next week to let them joining the region competition, so they could compete for our school honour."

I was trembling, when the teacher brought out about two persons, afraid he meant Kang Yu and me.

Then the teacher added, "later on in the future all of you should learn from these two students, the sciences^{1]} subject should learn well, while exercising also important, don't just study *death book*, strong body is more important.

There was student asked, "Who are those people that teacher mean?"

I unable to bear my step backward, murmured inside my heart, please not me, please not me.

"They are Ou Yang Miao Miao and Kang Yu, today both of them during lunch break were sweating lots while running at sport field, practicing running, seeing them teacher really moved, also felt so gratified." Ai Xin Jue Luo, this surname if being mentioned would really long, it really shocking surname so most of teacher usually called him Kang Yu.

My heart was bursting into tears.

"Starting tomorrow afternoon, both of you will practicing during lunch break, I will carefully train both of you." Teacher was looking at us, as if he has found long life goal, struggle, fist and tears.

I felt hard to reject, unable to extricate oneself from a difficult situation^{2]}, so I just cursed on Kang Yu for hundred and thousand times.

I also could not say because of kicking his leg, so I run.

I did really have hard time to say.

I also not see Kang Yu rejecting, or just barely hard to reject, I could see he really likes sport, every time after having lunch he would went to play football with others male class mates, after all playing football still need to run, anyway for him there nothing to lose.

But I was different, after finished eating, I still want to have nap.

Because of this, I completely dome, inside my heart I cursed Kang Yu for countless times.

My life.... how could it turn so grief....

Because of this matter, it affected my mood for such long time, for the rest classes, I took deep breath and feeling alike to smash my head to table, making dead body posture, and then upright the book, as the shield in front of head, as for whatever teacher said, none of it entered into my ears.

It wasn't easy for me endured till school ended, I was faster than anyone when tidy up my stuffs, just before I went out, I saw Kang Yu slowly-leisurely tidy up his

stuffs, his expression was so happy, when looking at his eyes, it felt pricking eyes.

The devil inside heart crawls out.

My eyes burst evil looked, waiting until he back to my back, I would kick him severely.

He squishing sound, he has been already lying in the desk near the window.

Witnessing this, I quickly made my moves, I run as fast as I could, even I didn't care my habit to go to toilet before went home, or when my fellow sisters were asking me to go home together, I did not answered them, I just run so fast alike wind to the front gate of school, after passing for while, I dared to laugh hardly.

Vent my anger, I did vent my anger.

I made fist, malevolent!

I felt my mood increased much, I extremely happy walked heading to my home.

All Shanghai Junior High School are divided according to the region and which area you are resident in according to your household registration, so there will be your school where you will study in, so that everyone does not need to go so far from their house to school, walking to school is so common for students in here, of course there are also some who against the law of discipline, who haven't reached 14 years old but riding bicycle to school.

Well, actually I considered as those who against and violate the discipline, but today I was not riding my bicycle because it was sent to workshop.

My resident permit is registered under my mother household, but the place where I live in and the resident area according to my resident permit are different, but not far. It so good that it only common outside boundary, that turned out to be separated by the line of abandoned railroad, now it known as Shanghai people Ya An prefecture of West Shaanxi highway—Hong Xu advanced of rainbow street.

During Junior High, both sides of the abandoned railway was green fields, the weeds were overgrown, the grass were taller than people height, every time when I was walking here, I able to pull the grass alike dog's tail, humming and

flinging it on my way went home, I always be in high spirit that time and also I like to walk in railroad surface line.

Today just same as usual.... But, played and played, I felt the urgency to pee.

Note:

1] 数 Shu 理 Li 化 hua : abbr for math, physics and chemistry or science subjects.

2] 骑 Qi 虎 hu 难 nan 下 xia: who rides a tiger afraid to dismount (idiom)

2.3

Chapter 2

Pee Pee incident

Last Part

I am type of person who live alike clock, every morning at six o'clock I should go for pee, after school ended, I need to go to toilet. I can't hold myself when I need to pee.

November 1990 Shanghai was extremely cold, the weather was extremely cold and the frequency of pee were increasing more often which really torturing, I thought to hurry fleeing home to settle it, but I could not make it, both of my legs were so tightly closed, afraid if I loosen it, I could not hold back.

Things would not work, really not able, would be hard to endure, the only thing was to ignore the public health matters, at sudden I took a big stride forward, rushed into those tall weeds, while panic looking surrounded whether there were people or not in near, when ensure there was no one, immediately took off the skirt.

Just squatting when about pee-ing, there was someone shadow unexpectedly appeared.

I did not dare to go until deep inside the weeds, afraid there would be insects or worms, mouse or others animal so that I just choose edge side of the place, there just little weed to cover, so never expected there would be someone walked over and happen to look at me.

Once able to see clearly, I crumbled, face turned pale.

Instantaneous hold in the pee, pulled the pant, shocked for moment and run thousand miles.

The urine was warm, the weather was cold, and then sudden white smoke curl

upwards.

After pee feeling was so comfortable, especially during the winter, after comfortable feeling there would chills feeling, I did experienced chills but my chills was double.

Because that person was not stranger, he was Kang Yu.

I realized and caught his blank stared, I so sure that he saw it, he saw it really and very clear.

At that moment, I really wanted to suicide, My brain tried to search and find whatever the reason in order to convince him that I was not doing pee pee, but instead I was doing something related to public health, for example was irrigating the farmland.....

At last, I had very strong thought --why world not directly doom.

Of course, earth would not perish just because I intended.

I was totally screwed.

“Ugh... Do you also want to have pee for moment...”

“.....”

Chapter 3 (3.1)

Chapter 3

Standing Punishment

I never knew how I able to go home, did I wear my pant properly and then I went home? Or I didn't wear pant and just running back home? Was there any difference, whatever it was, I had been seen, so whether I wore or not wore, would it be matter?

So humiliating, early had been humiliated my grandmothers' mother and mothers^{1]}.

Once I arrived at home, I dashed directly into second floor, got into my own room, lying at my bed, rolling from my bed to floor surface, and then I started over and over again.

I felt my life has already at the edge of end.

That was my karma retribution, if I had not kicked him, and then I should never had awkward and also experienced such humiliating thing.

I was so regretted till I could feel my intestines perhaps turned pale.

I kept on rolling and rolling, kept on sleeping, and kept on crying until my bed wet with tears.

Suddenly I thought, what day would the next day, did I need to go to school or not? I took glance to the calendar, I cried even fierce.

Tomorrow is Friday, since it is Friday then it would be the most evil Friday, ahahhhhhhhhahh!!!

What should I do? How and could I have face to meet Kang Yu?

Perhaps, I should hurry get out, searching a street, standing in the middle, and then waiting for car to crash me....I could feel this idea really good, in order to get the instant result!

But, I don't have that guts....

At this moment, my room's door is pushed gently, a big and black German shepherd walking in, my dad and I are petting it, every day we give him chicken as food, so it is stronger compare to the common others German shepherd breed, the black color mixed with ashy color are so murky, once every week it should be take a bath, so that its fur so shiny, the neck hair is thick, it similar as if being wrapped by scarf. It has stands hanging ears, it looked at me from back of the head, looking that I rolling in floor, it seemed so excited and barking few times.

I don't intend to respond to it, stood up, waving one hand, what I meant, your master no mood so better you play by yourself.

Perhaps I have spoiled it too much, I ignored it, so that it become crazier, lift forelimb, rush toward me.

My God, it has more than 100kgs, pressed onto my lungs and air gone, it also considered me as lollipop, keep on licking me, later on, my face wet of its saliva.

"Cai Xi^{2]}, move away, move away!!" I used hand to push it.

At that time if petting dog, named it as Cai Xi something so common, the reason because a movie that title Lassie. Everyone wants to have dog similar like Lassie, unchangeable in memory, everyone likes to call their dog Lassie and I am not the exception.

Cai Xi so naughty, always considering me as its toys, very energetic, licking me even harder, I was licked so itchy by it, finally I could not restrain myself to laugh.

It became more excited, it wagging its tail.

I could not hold back, so I gave him an order, "Cai Xi, Sit."

German shepherd is highest selected as dog breed used by police, have high intelligence, as long as you have patience, it could learn anything, only by give one time order, it could sit straight, stretch tongue, ha ha heavily breathing.

At the moment I felt my body lighter, my body became more relax, sat up, I looked at it.

I always thought that our Cai Xi must be type of the most handsome dog, his

eyes, apricot shape, bronze-colored, his eyes bright and piercing, in twilight coldness, nose would wet, black and shiny, all over is gallant and full of vigor.

I so satisfied and then patting its head, “Very good, good.”

“Wang Wang (barking voice)!” it barked as replied.

Being spoiled by it, immediately I discard my previous stupid idea to look for car on the road in order crashing me, pinching and playing with its chin that plump of meat, it felt comfortable so sounded huh u, occasionally exposed its teeth and chewed my hand, it not hurt because we were playing, but truth it has really sharp teeth. When I was in primary school, I ever been bitten by dog, but not the dog fault, it was because I was playing with it tail so that not it fault.

I am type of person who loves dog so much, I never afraid to bite by them, the reason dogs are biting if not rabies, so it might nothing more than self-defense. Biting and biting then become habit, others than, if dog randomly biting people, it also not dog fault but the master fault because cannot teach the dog well.

So that, seeing its teeth that white and shiny, I never feel afraid even for little bit, on the contrary my brain suddenly flashing very brilliant idea.

I put my soft and white hand into Cai Xi’s mouth and said toward it, “Cai Xi, come, come and bite me.”

At this moment, I felt I am such genius.

Cai Xi crocked its head little bit, looked at me, produce barking sound, clearly it did not understand the phrase command.

“Come, faster bite, this is fresh flesh trotters.” I was moving my hand in front of it.

It waging and waging its tail, it eyes bright as if shown that it understood, opened wide it mouth...

I became excited.

Note :

1] 姥姥 Lao Lao : Maternal Grand mother

2] 莱 cai西 Xi : Lassie, popular movie of dog named lassie.

3.2

Chapter 3

Part 2 (Two)

Cai Xi stretching out his tongue and licked on me....

I could feel my brain flames, "Who asked you to lick, bite ah!"

Cai Xi: barking! (He still licked...)

"Aiya!!" I shouted loudly.

He, still licking...

"Bite ah!!!"

He keeps on licking...

I silent...then I ignored Cai Xi, lying on the floor surface and crying as if dripping mourning tears.

As I thought, if I Cai Xi bites me, tomorrow I could ask permission and no need come to school.

"You are stupid...." I pointing my finger to his nose, scolded.

Cai Xi looked at my finger that pointing on him, and then he is licking again....

I felt there's no hope for me, lying on the floor surface, as if death body.

It seems Cai Xi had played enough, pacing back and forth at my side, lie and sit down, its head resting into my stomach.

I think, at the end simply forget that idea and I pretended to be death body....

But I am type of person who can't resist being hungry, once I heard my mom called me for dinner, I will ran faster than anyone.

One family four persons, we eat hot soup and food, but I don't even taste anything, my mind just wandering to find idea, an idea that able to make me no need coming to school tomorrow.

I lowered my head, looking at my bowl which filled with white rice, occasionally peeking at mom and dad, my movement which similar to thief, so obvious my younger sister realized, she kicked my feet, gently asked, "What are you doing?"

I said, “I think to skip school.”

“Crazy!!” she put a meat into my bowl, “Brace yourself and eat more.”

At Junior High thinking to skip the school, it seeks to death!!

My dad seems to realize my weirdness, very considerate asking, “What happen, dear daughter3]!”

Nan Nan is term that used by the Shanghai people to call their child as endearment.

I shook my head, not dare to say anything.

“Does the pocket-money not enough?” my dad is not stingy when it comes to give pocket-money for me and my sister.

Even though it not about this matter, but I still shamelessly nodding.

I did not have way out, during the school time as student, who did not want to have more pocket-money.

My dad expression obviously looked understand, adding more vegetable into my bowl, “After dinner, dad will give you, just say how much you need, so let’s finish the food and eat more.” And then, dad also facing and said same thing to my sister.

Anyway if one gets something, the other will also get same thing, my dad is a fair person.

After finished dinner, I took the money that given by dad for me, in my heart, I was happy and bitter after got back into my room, the money in hands could not erase my fear to go to school tomorrow.

Having money too much also is not omnipotent.

I recalled, I haven’t finished my homework, I felt more headaches, but as student I do have sense of consciousness, hurried take out the book from bag, crouching the book on table and starting to do the homework.

I wrote with tremendous speed, as if to vent all my sorrow onto the work sheet.

Eight grade homework is not really difficult furthermore I am counted as smart

student, I done my homework effortlessly.

after I done with my homework I planned to watch TV, but after I turned on TV, I lost my interest, and then I turned off TV, I walked to book shelf, looking for comics, I am number one fans for comic books, furthermore the Japanese Manga, when I was in seven grade (junior high 1st year), it was the huge buzz of Japanese manga, because of that, I bought so many comic books, Crest of the Royal Family4], Saint Seiya, Dragon Ball, Ranma ½, all those comic books were published by Hainan Photography, unlike today comic book that thick, during that time the comic books were thin, and at most only five volumes and the less one volume, so my book shelf are filled with it.

Every time I read comic books, I ease to be enchanted, it could be said that once I read comic books, I could turned my focus and forget all my problems, no matter the comic has read by me or not.

Usually, when I have enchanted, after I read and re-read, I might fall asleep.

Waiting for the alarm to wake me up, it has already at the second day in the morning.

Six o'clock, such rushing time.

I resented waking up from my bed, brushing my teeth, have my breakfast, and then have ransel bag on my back and go out from house.

When I was walking in the street, my brain tried to think hard, what should I say to Kang Yu today?

And how about him, what would he say to me?

Yesterday when he saw that scenery, did he say anything? Nonetheless, I seem to have been deleted that memory, so no matter how I wanted to remember, I could not do so.

How could once I walked, it has been in front of school gate already.

I felt shivering little bit, stood in front of school gate, why I not dare to get inside.

Those student who attending the school had passed me, all of them were put weird stared at me, merely I pretended that I was waiting others.

At this moment, at seven and ten minutes, I should go inside the school, or else I might regard as late.

I persistent to wait till the last minutes, and then I entered school, walking with very slow pace so similar with the robot which lacking oil, entering the class room. When I was walking and stopped right in front of the class room, I hid at the door corner, peeking inside the class room. All the students were arrived and have started the morning class already.

Note:

3] 囯nan國 nan : Dear daughter

4] 尼 ni 罗 luo 河 he 女 nu JL er : Crest of the Royal Family is shojo manga by Chieko Hosokawa.

I am thinking to make censored for being loved exclusively by you. Perhaps I will go for summary translation for chapter seven after the first part. There will be steamy scenes in chapter seven after the first part and I hardly to translate it and make it more proper since it's not simple undress scenes or bed scene but things kind of detail that....
hmmm...I hope you guys understand what I mean about XXOO's thingy.

Or do you guys have any suggestion? should I go for summary or full translation?

3.3

Chapter 3

Part 3 (Three)

Naturally, I am searching for Kang Yu, I spotted him, one of his hands was hold his head and he was facing into the window, I wondered what he has seen?

Immediately I shrink my head, giving myself time to prepare my mental-state.

I told myself, it was only being seen when having “pee”, so there was nothing to make fuss about it. Everyone is also pee, even when I was in toilet, perhaps I also got viewed sometimes.

Alright! there is anything to be scared, Ou Yang Miao Miao, all great people have ever done stupid things, well people who have done stupid and mistake are those regarding as human, and then those people will change to be great people in the future.

I took a step but pulled it back whenever one my feet almost touched the floor. I shrunk my body.

I scold and cursed myself, I am such useless person. Whenever I tried make first step then I stopped and step backward, at last I shrunk my body again.

In front of the door, I move my footstep forward and then backward.

The fellow classmate who sat near to the class room door, realized and immediately shout with weird tone, “Class leader, what are you doing?”

I flame up and yelling, “none of your business!!”

I was yelling too loud and the result all my classmate turned their focus on me, including Kang Yu who also looked at me.

I didn't have way turned back, I forced myself to enter and lower my head down.

I walked to my seat, put down my school bag and not dared to look at him, but I heard his greeting, “Morning!!”

Morning your head, I was cursing in my heart. But my face dared not to show any expressions furthermore I forced myself to make one fake smile, very stiff said, “Morning....Good Morning...hehehehe....”

I took out my pencil case, my homework sheets, and also literature book which was first subject and then sat down in my seat.

He didn't say anything but I could sense the awkward atmosphere. If there nothing to say, I do really sorry for this early awkward atmosphere for this morning class.

Not really sure whether I am too much thinking or what, I sensed Kang Yu is still looking at me, but I don't have any guts and dare not to see him directly, I feel my heart uncomfortable.

"Yesterday..." Silent for moment, Kang Yu opened his mouth.

Once I heard yesterday this word, my heart beating peng peng peng, chaos. What was yesterday, what was happen yesterday?

I am panicking; busy to distract him and trying to change the topic, initially I wanted to ask, today, have you eaten your breakfast?

This is kind of Chinese way to give prior notice.

Well, just those words!!!

I have thought to say those words in my mind, but once I thought about yesterday incident of pee pee, as the result I had burst nonsense.

I opened up my mouth and said, "You.... You....Have you...today done pee?"

After I finished, I saw him as if being chocked by his own saliva, cough.

For the next seconds, finally I able to response for what I have said before.

My face turned beet red and also my ears.

I really am super idiot.

Things that should not be mentioned finally are mentioned too.

Perhaps he might think that I am the most foolish person in the world.

"hahahahahahaha!!!!"

Just as I predicted, suddenly Kang Yu burst laughing, he is laughing very hard, he even laugh till his head lying at the surface of table, one of his hand slapping the other side of table, he laughing so hard and dramatic.

His loud laughing, drew all the classmates focus, and once again I becoming the main focus.

I feel so embarrassed, lower my head as if covered my embarrassment.

Everyone looking at me, I don't any option than reached out my hand from beneath the desk and grabbing his uniform collar, pulling him hard to stop.

He finally noticed his loud laughter and made it lower, everyone act as if nothing and then all of them get back to do their stuffs.

3.4

Chapter 3

Part 4 (Four)

While Kang Yu seems to restrain himself for laughing, his body is trembling crazily, but I don't feel happy when see him like that. Moreover I do not dare to say any words because I afraid once he felt offended then he might tell everyone about my shameful incident, on that way, how could I able to see others people in my life again?

It is seven thirty and because of outside is starting drizzle, we are inside the classroom and listened to the school radio that inform to do gymnastic class indoor. My movement is very stiff and so does with my motion pace getting slow, very careful and cautious not dare to "touch" him in order to avoid him for having any opportunity to do evil thing to me.

After done with the exercise, taking little break, the bell rings and the first class is starting.

My literature teacher is Mr. Sun who is also homeroom teacher but after two days he stopped because he got promotion to be headmaster, and now our homeroom teacher is English Teacher called Teacher He.

I never so serious like today when study English subject, simply to say, I put all my concentration such as taking note very carefully, even all the words are written in very neatly strokes.

But Kang Yu seems not to let me off, he get closer to me and softly said, "Don't you want to ask, what I had seen yesterday?"

After I heard it, my pencil tip crooked, directly draw an irregular curve.

"You... what do you want?" no matter how I thought, after I heard his question, I felt as if being threaten.

"Well, you think?" he has very nice voice but no matter how my ears heard it, it feels like something so scary will happen.

At the end my skin thinned^{1]} during this time I still such young, extremely pure, if it is the ten years later me, I will be able to present him a slap, accuse and smear him to have saw girl when peeing.

But during this time I only junior high second year, I don't have any concerned about this thing. I just felt myself was doing something so embarrassing and does not want people to find it out.

When I answered him, my voice is trembling, nervously looking at him, "You... what do you want...what...you...thought.... Fine...."

I could see Kang Yu smiling eyes, he seems to give sufficient consideration about my feasibility words and to extend there is nothing left.

I am able to sense his evil emotion from his pair of eyes.

He looked at me, very intense look, the way he looked me even give me a goose bump.

After one second, two seconds, three seconds, finally he softly said, "very well!"

I don't understand so that I keep looking at him who exposure his sweet smiling face.

What did he mean?

Didn't he have waiting for me since this morning only to enmesh me?

But I still haven't seriously to think about it, my small brain is filling with all embarrassing scenes that happen yesterday.

When I lifted my head, the English teacher is in front of me already.

He sees Kang Yu and me, his hand which is holding chalk trembling, the chalk almost crumbled and I so shock to see his cold eyes through his glasses.

"What is very well, could you let me know?"

Ugh.....

"During the class you guys are not seriously listen to the lecture, moreover both of you dare to chat during the class, what you guys want to be?"

I lower my head as expression that I am admitting my fault.

"Both of you get out from your seat, as the punishment, stand up in front of class, reflecting on the mistakes."

At this moment, the standing punishment is granted.

As the result, Kang Yu and I are punished in front of the class, standing at the edge of room and being whole attention of the class.

This homeroom of mine, he just too....rock!

Note:

1] can't help not to care

Chapter 4 (4.1)

Chapter 4 The Birth Scandal

I think I am being enslaved by Kang Yu, I company him during the class (since we are sharing same table), on the afternoon I company him exercising (this is my karma because kicked him), I company him during lunch (my weakness is in his hand, I not dare to ask him moves, and also not dare to allow him having lunch with others because I afraid once he having lunch with others, they will have chat and just afraid the secret being spilled and revealed)

So where my freedom as human is, where is it?

Don't say that I should spend my junior high in such way?

No, I don't want and absolutely no!!!!

Or should I also go to peek him when he pee....

Ugh....

This idea is too nasty, it not handle well, once people know about it, they might think I am as pervert.

Every day I am thinking how can I get back my freedom as human and the most important is reviving my glory.

But there is no opportunity because I could not find any. From Kang Yu's head to his toe there is no weakness that I able to shake him up, he good at his study, he is well educate, he quite popular among people and the most important and could not be forgiven, he is so handsome.

Beat chest, arghhhhhhhhh!!!!!

During the break, I love to have chat with my fellow sisters, but recently I don't have times to chat, lying at my table, I feel my tears flowing.

What are they chatting, I don't join them, but every time we have chat, most of time the topic will be about me.

"Miao Miao, recently you have very good relation with Kang Yu!" Xiao Fan said

among other fellow sisters.

"Ng, Miao Miao who never remembered names of the boys in our class even when all of us have same class since our first year but only Kang Yu, she remembers it very well," Xu Ying said.

Xiao Shuang (Little Pair) said, "That's right, that's right, furthermore she even have chit chat during the class, chat until both of them got standing punishment, simply unprecedented."

"When afternoon they also lunch together." Liu Li Jun said.

"Even in the afternoon both of them are practicing 400m running." Da Shuang (Big Pair) said.

After all of them done talking and then they are keep silent for moment.

The quietness remaining for seconds, suddenly I sensed there are excitement atmosphere and also the exhausted sound, and the other moment I even sense a burning sight.

I don't understand so I looked at them.

Kao (Cursing word)! What kind of expression!

Sparkling eyes filled with ambiguous, piercing into my eyes, hard to open.

I sweat cold sweat but trying to cover it, "you guys... what...what do you want to do?" their eyes sight too strong, I feel burn and stammered.

All of them in unison said, "You and Kang Yu!"

"Kang Yu?"

All of them are nodding, very serious.

"What is good to talk about Kang Yu and me?" He and I, we are not same path people.

Suddenly Xiao Fan's big hand claps and it is excited slap onto the surface of table, forcing asked, "Said, what is your relation with Kang Yu?"

Relation? What kind of relation you have expected.

If there is relation then it is nemesis.

But, I am not daring to say any word because I afraid all of them will keep on asking me why.

“Alright, said it, faster.” Some of them are exposure their curiosity and racket me.

“What should I say, he and I are ordinary classmate, seat-mate, what are you guys expecting, asking me such boring question, as if he and I are having....” said till here, suddenly quick-witted with their means.

Once I see their disbelief expression, suddenly I understood.

“You guys... don’t indulge flight of fancy, there is nothing like that.” My face turned beet red, panicky swinging my hand.

There is old saying about——more you wipe more black it is, every explanation just turned be excuses.

It is so obvious that every words I have said to them, seems to be excuses in their ears.

None of them believe on me, moreover each of them is throwing strange smiles.

I become panic, “not like that, there is anything like that.”

“So you say, last time during English class, what did you chat with Kang Yu, both of you were so enthusiastically, even when the English teacher is standing near to you, both of you were not realized?”

Xiao Fan is insisting on asking, only by one sentence, it hit to the point.

What is called as aggressive, finally I knew it. This is called as aggressiveness.

I have been speechless.

Xiao Fan using her nose to make “snorting” sound, her small face is showing unstoppable laughing, “See, see, this is what we called fishy.”

Inside my heart, I feel so melancholy, there is nothing fishy la.

I am being accused wrongly.

To say during my junior high school, that time, this kind of topic was not so open like today. But there still have possibility of puppy love, and most of time it

only “admiration love” which not long lasting and will ended soon after graduation.

During that time, we never mentioned about love but only called it as like.

A naïve and innocent liking of each other, the interest that build because both of the girl and boy get attraction each other as opposite sex, the simple pleasure to take sweet and sour taste of ambiguity of love.

That thing is able to say more “white” (pure) than snow, so that this kind of topic somewhat taboo for us to talk about.

Even it something called taboo but it makes us even want to know more, this kind of temptation and excitement, we are not dare to touch but at same time we have also thought of it.

Especially when there is someone bumps into this taboo thing, we are becoming so excited, even study become something dreary for us.

This is so obvious; my fellow classmate sisters are getting more excited about this matter.

“Do you like him or not!” Xu Ying winked her eyes, asking me.

While Da Shuang and Xiao Shuang are also give me burning sight.

Aiyaaa, Oh my goodness! This mishap goes further.

4.2

Anyone miss Kang Yu and Miao Miao?

Here is new chap and still filled with many funnies and mishap. Ah ya, I should correct the title for this chap, it should be the beginning of scandal

Chapter 4 The Beginning of Scandal

I feel so anxious and my face deflated to “Pig Liver” color, hurried I said, “I don’t like him, dislike him, not even slightly, Kang Yu that bastard, who will....likes him.”

After I done bad mouthing him, I nodded my head as approval for my standpoint.

But who knows after I done, I spotted Kang Yu had already stood at back of my fellow sisters and glared to me.

Ugh....

Desperate, he seems to hear what I said.

I have not forgotten that my weakness still in his hands, I starting to be worried, I just done with bad mouthing him and called him as bastard that he might hear it.

My heart feels as if stopped to beat, I tried to recall in my mind perhaps, that recently, I haven’t done anything which pissed him off or offended him.

Perhaps things will be alright, when I was having lunch, I deliberately shaking my chicken wings so that oil splashing to all over his body, during the class I made line on purpose so he won’t able to write comfortable, during the running exercise, I drank all the mineral water on purpose....

More I thought more I feel black, as it turned during “my enslaved” time, I was able to do many things.

At last I still made him to hear my cursed for him.

I thought, this time I am dead meat.

He was silently standing there, while my fellow sisters none of them knew he was there, and me...I able sense how bad mood he is.

Nonsense, if there is someone cursed and badmouthing me, said how that person dislike me, will I still smile and act nicely with that person? Of course I

would feel humiliated.

I thought he might extremely angry, perhaps he would try to embarrass me by telling everyone about my “awkward incident”.

I sweating cold sweat, I tried to think hard how to save my life, at least, Kang Yu deliberate and unhurried steps, walking in front of my fellow sisters and I said something, “Annoying, move aside.”

Xiao Fan completely not sense my fear when seeing him, but firmly asked him, “Kang Yu, what had you talked to Miao Miao during literature class last time?”

Not far from Kang Yu there are some boys, some of them are normally having good term with Kang Yu, after they heard Xiao Fan questioned, they became curious and turn their body to listen, they wanted to know what was happen (more to investigate).

When I heard it, my stomach feels hurt.

Does God want to perish me? This is one of good opportunity to let Kang Yu speak up.

First reaction of Kang Yu, he startled and then he started to murmur something not clearly but his eyes keeps on looking at me, it makes ambiguity between us.

This...what this means?

Does he try to torture me?

It's my sin! My karma!

Nothing sadder than a withered heart (nothing is more wretched than apathy), my entire body numb.

It feels so ambiguity moreover when that cunning Kang Yu answered, “oh, that, nothing...”

“what is nothing?” Xiao Fan still keeps on asking.

When he sat on his seat, calm and composed took out his book, there is no slightly interest to give an answer.

I feel it strange and amiss.

Does he think to spare me this time?

No matter how I thought about it, Kang Yu isn't look alike want to conceal thing from Xiao Fan and others fellow sister who keeps on asking, "that is the secret between class leader and I, I can't say it. really cannot say it." he especially come near to me and said, "isn't it? Class leader!"

That kind of manner and the way of speaking as if there is really something happen between both of us!

That light and simple answered are able to make Xiao Fan and others and also some boys looked at me.

Why should they look at me, I didn't do anything!

At the time I really don't know how to act, the bell is ringing and class is starting.

To be honest, there is no way for someone like me who is really expecting the bell ring this fast and the class starting, I shed tears of gratitude when it ringing.

Once the bell is ringing, everyone is scattering alike birds and beast (flee in all direction).

Finally, I able to breathe relieved.

When the class is starting, I am waiting for Kang Yu to ask me the reason why I badmouthing him, but he did not ask, he is calm and quiet which really strange for me, he seems to be so focus during the class, but for me, I even feel more anxious and not even dare to make any move, my focus isn't in study but aware what he would do later on.

This is literature class, Teacher Sun since the last time incident is especially pay attention toward Kang Yu and I, particularly, loves to make me answer question or just to read and recite something.

This time exactly similar, for the sake of good and bad, this time my name is being called, he lets me to recite some section in literature.

But just now all my focus is spent in Kang Yu, I didn't know which section he meant.

Teacher Sun sees me dawdling, he asked me to come out.

My heart feel more anxious and panic, I hurried flipping my literature book.

Teacher Sun unhappily looking at me, “what are you reciting?”

I feel headache and also cold sweat.

Kang Yu with good intention, pointing one section of the literature book, showing it to me.

At this moment I do really thankful to him, hurried read that section which pointed by him, reciting it for Teacher Sun.

After teacher Sun listened, he hurried pointing at us, he said “both of you really have good relationship moreover it is not the an ordinary good.”

All of the classmates are looking at me after they heard what Teacher Sun said.

My face turned red and does not know how to answer or act.

At this moment, Kang Yu added, “Teacher, every success women there is success men who support at their back, this is something that I should do. We are work together so that we will progress together.”

Teacher Sun then laughing happily, “you are right, speaks very well. Both of you keep on continuing work hard, keep on progressing.” After he done, he laughed happier.

The whole class is followed to laugh.

I can't laugh, what and what...

4.3

Chapter 4 The Beginning of Scandal

The class is continuing, but I sense there is fellow classmate who silently looking at Kang Yu and I, their stare even makes me feel embarrassing.

After the class ended, I just want to breathe fresh air, but I stopped by Kang Yu.

“What?” I asked him.

He rolled his eyes, said “It seems there is something get into my eyes, please help me to see, I feel uncomfortable.”

I thought why should he asked me but afterall he has helped me just now so no matter what it is I should thanks him. Moreover I do not waste so much energy to help him take a look his eyes.

“Inside the eyes? Which ones?”

“I think both of the eyes; please you take a look for the both.”

He lets me to have seat, facing toward his pair of eyes directly.

But I could not see anything get into his eyes, it just so normal, he has very bright and clear eyes.

About ten seconds, I have said there is nothing, suddenly Kang Yu said, “Okay, I thought there is nothing.”

I frowned, at moment he said there is something but another moment he said there is nothing. What mischief he tries to do? Ah~ not care too much, I just hurried to go to toilet.

Once I turned my head, I able to see there are many classmates who are looking towards us, moreover they are whispering:

“have you seen, both of them are lovingly looking at each other.”

“I have seen it, have seen it...”

“It seems they are communicating through eyes....”

I turned back my head, looking at Kang Yu, I see he patting his head, smiling

sweetly looking at me.

I feel blank.

As the result, there is the beginning of gossip about something between Kang Yu and I which are spreading to the entire....

Chapter 5 (5.1)

Chapter 5 They Called Me Fu Jin

The next ten days is the last week of November which also my class patrols week, that why the class leader of the “in charge class” should come earlier, wearing the red sleeve badge, standing in front of the school gate, welcoming all the Juniors and Seniors student. Apart from this duty, we also volunteer to be janitor of the school, doing free labor as compulsory for school service, at the same time, trying to intimidate others who we dislike. But the most advantage of this activity is no need to join the class.

As the rule, I wear the sleeve badge. When I was kid, I thought this kind of things was really miraculous, but when I grow up, I just realized this badge is similar with neighborhood committee used to wear. My beautiful memories suddenly changed into black and white.

Waiting until the clock showed seven forty five, it is time to close school gate. My class is divided into several small groups so that we are able to start cleaning the school. I do the attendance check list and realized my enemy isn’t there.

“Where is Kang Yu?” I asked.

One male student with mischievous smile, answered, “In reply to Fu Jin, Wang Ye is in sports ground.”

After he done, all the students are laughing, they looked at me with adore glance.

In sudden, strangely everyone thought Kang Yu and I have become a pair. While on the teacher’s side, the classmates have very tight mouth, so the gossip only spread among the students.

Well, during that time, things happen in that way, every student meets teacher alike mice meeting cat, when there is no teacher we are make noise and playing crazily but once the teacher there, we become quiet and act as good student.

There is solidarity among student. If there is someone experience puppy love

and feel for that puppy love, then it becomes everyone secret, so everyone would like to protect it. That's why no one will make a report to teachers.

"Go to die, Fu Jin your head! I have said don't call me Fu Jin!!" I walked to that boy in front, gritting my teeth yelling at him.

During the Junior High School, everyone likes to give nickname, for example Fan Juan is being called as Xiao La Jiao (little chili), Liu Li Jun as Niu Lao Lao (grand ma cow), Yu Wen Jing as Da Shuang (big pair), Li Wen Yi as Xiao Shuang (Little pair) but sometimes they also called Xiao Li Zi (small plum) whatever it is parable, to make it textual criticism. Whatever if you being called by one person and follow by another person so, everyone would start to call you same.

I don't have any nickname, but afraid since there is rumor between Kang Yu and me, everything has changed.

All because of the drama which is root of the evil, especially the drama made by Qiong Yao Ah Yi (Taiwanese novelist, producers, Qiong Yao who wrote pearl princess AKA huan zhu ge ge). The drama titled Wan Jun, most of it pictured the beauty of nature, dynasty genre types and then Mei Hua Luo, during that time the average drama genre were alike those, very melodramatic. At beginning we would not watch this kind of dramas, usually only the adults would watch it. We are belonging to the group that watch the 6pm animation series but the adult were very enthusiastically and even cried vigorously during watching. We are so curious that why we are also followed them to watch.

It gives more understanding after watching the drama, so that the wife of Wang Ye is called as Fu Jin while the second wife or mistress is called as Ce Fu Jin.

First time they called me Fu Jin because those male students who are close to Kang Yu, purely influenced by those melodramatic series, they thought by called me Fu Jin is something fun so every time they see me they would call me Fu Jin Fu Jin. The entire class is so enthusiast and following to call me for the next days. Everyone is called me Fu Jin, this stuff really gets into my head and there is no chance for me to make denial and refuse.

The most evil is Kang Yu. Every day I try to clarify our relationship with our classmates but none of them believe. It better for me to start from him, I asked him to step in and clarified.

But he replied me, "you have told them many times, does it really work?"

Naturally I shake my head, "my lips already worn out, none of them believe."

He said to me, "See, there is things more you touch up it only become worse, why don't you let it be."

What he means by more touch thing up worse it becomes, the current situation without any touch up it has worse enough.

The moment I try to persuade him, he has already waving his hand and happily goes out to play football with his fellow friends.

Hence, I could not control myself, I catch up him and kick on his butt.

His face darkening and chasing me, while I running for avoiding him.

Unexpectedly, the gossip goes bigger.

The gossip runs wild not only about simple liking but it has reached to the stage of flirting each other (teasing a woman by pretending to be displeased with her).

This...what kind of world is this, why should take other life to play.

I cried.

5.2

This part is describing some complicated relationship among students during Miao Miao's school time. Kids were so naive and innocent on that time

Chapter 5

Part 2 (Two)

They Called Me Fu Jin

But after I experienced that time, I just realized gossips are not about me solely. It happen to others too.

Alike my other classmates who are males and twins, named Zhang Qi (brother) is courting on Da Shuang while his younger brother Zhang Lin seems to like Xiao Shuang. But Xiao Shuang seems to like the next class student named Meng Shao Dong. Xiao Fan and Huang Yan Yong who shared same table seem to have love triangle with the back desk female student, Wang Jia Wei. Who loves whom, I still feel very confused even when I had graduated. Liu Li Jun seems to have special relationship with the sweetest male student in my class. Furthermore, there are more than half of the male student of my class who trying to pursuit Xu Ying.

In sequence, one by one in the class is investigated to the point no love rival.

Well, now our class seems alike “lecher men and brothel women”* (aiya, this idiom finally used) it only me who does not know anything.

Finally I felt little bit satisfied.

My matters seem nothing if compare to the others.

But the thing I hate most is they still called me Fu Jin.

I feel....little bit unease.

Male students see me as fierce but strangely they don't afraid of me, in contrary they like to laugh and tease me Fu Jin and Fu Jin until my face turn red. So when I pissed off, I abruptly said, “lowly servant, you clean the toilet.”

“Ah!” someone shrivel up.

I sneered, “didn't you guys call me Fu Jin, so now Fu Jin is ordered you to clean

toilet, go or not?"

The male student who being called "Lowly servant" stared blankly but indeed he still goes.

But I still angry and speaking with such fierce tone to those people, "Said, who still want to go to clean the toilet."

Who would go, our school toilet is well-known as old-model toilet, the light ray could penetrate until half waist of people who inside the toilet.

Everyone is pretending busy, hurried to do their job which has been assigned earlier.

Everyone dismissed, every time I think about Kang Yu, I feel extremely angry so I decided to find him to released my anger and get revenge.

During that time our school has two sports ground, one is the big field for morning exercise, heavy exercise, or using it during sport class, the other is small sport ground which has abandoned for long time, before it was used for convenient situation but the headmaster said it would use to build new class but it only a plan, now don't mention it, being abandoned for long time, the weeds and grass growth filled the field, it also has not good path to walk.

I am so angry, tired of looking for Kang Yu, even my vision not really good, but I have good instinct, moreover towards my nemesis. Alike the radar, I found him very fast under one of big willow trees.

In the winter, the willow would be yellowish, it only left the dry leaves of tree, Kang Yu is lying as if he having sun bathing.

His relaxing gestures, makes me even get angrier, if I were dog, I would have been rushing toward him and biting him...

But I was not a dog, so I just walked there.

Once I have arrived at his side, I yelled at him, "Kang Yu, get up!"

He not responded, I frowned, lower my head to see him.

This bastard is sleeping.

Really despicable, could not endure anymore!

I squatted my body, intended to pinch his nose so that he will wake up, when I want to pinch his nose, seeing him at this close distance, I feel little bit... Ah~ I could not bring myself to do it.

I always know that Kang Yu is good looking, his handsome appearance isn't type of ordinary handsome, his charm silhouette hasn't really shown because he just too young but his look has already to the stage of handsome (able to shake other heart), the pieces of sun ray warmly contours his facial feature as if being carved. Whether because of the sun effect or not, he has better skin than mine, he has soft and tender skin.

I just could not restrain myself not to touch him.

Note:

*) 男 nan 盜 dao 女 nv 媚 chang : lecher men and brothel women, (I not really sure whether I translate it right because I could not find this word so I tried to translate word by word). just correct me if there is error.

5.3

Chapter 5

Part 3 (Three)

They Called Me Fu Jin

Kang Yu suddenly wakes up, his pair of eyes opened wide looked at me, while I haven't prepared to hide my hand so it looks awkward hanging on the air.

Perhaps because of the sun ray piercing into his eyes, so that he winks and winks his eyes, after he gets used, he opens his eyes, he has clear bright pair of eyes, alike golden brown eyes, very beautiful.

Suddenly I feel as if I lost my soul, allured by him.

My head little bit dizzy, my heart thumping so fast.

I even suspected myself might be infected by mysterious sickness because of heat in winter.

When Kang Yu able to see clearly and spotted me, he showed alluring smiles, as if he able to read my mind through my every expression when our eyes meet. After he done examining my expression, he turned his looks to my stiffen hand which still in mid-air, laughing and asked, "What do you want to do?"

What I want to do?

I looked at my own hand, when I flashed back my intentional purpose to secretly touching him, my face instantly feel burn and super hot as if the temperature enough to fry egg, my brain hot, my person also become muddle-head, I raised both of my hands, to make threatening gestures, "I want to eat you up!!"

It still feel not enough, at last I imitate tigers sounds "howling and roaring".

After I done, I felt my heart crying-bleed, I am really super idiot.

Kang Yu dumbfounded for moment, I thought he might frighten little bit, perhaps he would running away, but he is still relaxing and lying at there.

I feel little bit awkward, but I have myself pride, so that I maintain that "scary claw" posture.

At the time I feel most awkward and thought to flee, finally he softly opened his mouth: "well, how do you plan to eat me?"

Paused, he even frowned, "Ng."

My God, I can guarantee to You, I am really not thinking at wrong direction (negative thought), but why I can feel he is driving me to have wrong direction.

This is an act of being enclosed.

I could feel it. I could feel it really encloses me.

The golden ray of sun shines on him, he lying there, as if an illusion, even his cloths gives that illusion effect as if he wears nothing (half-naked).

It is super scary illusion, as if I able to see Kang Yu's naked body, lying in front of me, and waving at me.

I starting to confuse with my rationality, at one side I want to run away but another sides I still want to experience... this flutter-feeling.

I am sinister, I am really a sinister.

Human ah~ even when they are under chaos and confuse situation, they still distort themselves to calm down.

I am this type of person.

I really calm and compose.

Very calm looks alike idiot, rigid, as if becoming sculpture...for long time not moving.

As for the next thing happen, I still not being able to recall what I had done even after me married with Kang Yu.

I had asked him, but Kang Yu is pissed off and glared at me, the matter is, I still can not to recall that moment until today, weird things, his face turned bit red.

I am so curious and keep on asking him, he gets annoyed with my question, and pressed my face.

I thought he wants to tell me something but, unexpectedly he kissed my cheek.

After he kissed me, he just left me alone.

Aiyaaaa?

Dumbfounded, rigid, and being turned alike sculpture...

Chapter 6 (6.1)

Chapter 6

Part 1 (One)

Spouse's Column

The gossip between Kang Yu and me are still continued, needless. Not only that, but it become more splendid with “seasoning”.

Kang Yu and I are listed by the teacher to join district competition, we even won as the winner. Actually it really nothing because my physic always good but I dislike it because will make my body smell after back to class.

Does not know which bastard said, “All because love power.”

What love power ah... this is because my own capability and strength.

Earlier if I know thing would be like this, better I aiming for last.

CRYING.

Apart of this, because the last time literature class, I had punished to stand up by Teacher Sun, so in order to make Teacher Sun ignored and forgot about this matter, I tried my best to listen carefully his teaching during his class.

Before, my literature always scores enough (middle score such 6 from 1-10), but this time, my Quiz even score higher and allow me to get third rank, I don't even believe in myself, but still feel happy, my effort and hard work finally paid off, really wise saying.

But Teacher Sun isn't thought in that way, he still remembered what Kang Yu ever told him, “*Behind the successful woman there is successful man who always supports her.*”

During the class, Teacher Sun often to bring up this topic, telling in front of the other students, they should learn from Kang Yu and me, learn about how we helped each others, learn about our good relationship, so that we are able to keep improving and progressing.

What good relationship ah, what helped each other ah, when heard by other classmates, it seems as if I am lovely-dovely with Kang Yu, our relationship is

something so sweet even affected to better study result.

Thus, this power of love, I tied with that image and it follows me like shadow.

Fu Jin, this nickname is label on me, no matter how I tried to stop, I just couldn't.

Because of our extraordinary progress, Teacher Sun even gives special recommendation for us, he lets Kang Yu to take committee duty on behalf of student study member.

The original committee member is Zhong Li Jun, (nickname Zhong Pi = leather skin) because of his illness, he ask long-term sick leave. So that the student committee member post always been empty. This proposal is given by male classmates.

Our class leaders committee, others than the sport committee this is one of powerless title in class leader committee because all member are girls, Kang Yu has good study result, he also has good relation with boys so he immediately get elected.

Student study committee, what is it?

Student study committee is members who help class leader, something alike helper/ assistant for class leader.

I have shared same table with Kang Yu and now, I should go to class leader committee together with him.

It means, if later we need to have meeting, planning for events, Kang Yu will be always beside me, keep on showing up in front of me.

Karma, it's karmaaaaaaaaa!!!!!!

At the end of December, mid-term exam, this period is one of the most important time for all the student, included me. I am types of student who is clasp the buddha's feet when danger arises (doing things in last moment), so for this time, I feel so pressure.

But different with Kang Yu, he does not have any pressure before examination, no matter when the class ended or lunch break, he is still enjoying to play football.

My resentment ah~

Today afternoon when the second class ended, certain male student comes to Kang Yu and asked him question. Who ask this brat has very good in study, normally he likes to help others, moreover he is student study committee member now, so there even many people like to seek help from him.

If there is someone wants to ask him about subjects, I should stand up and let that people to have my seat.

This boy called Ji Jie Xin, he is really serious with his study, all of us called him bookworm, because he likes study and read books, if he does not understand something he will immediately ask, so it already becomes his habit.

He sees me to let him sits on my seat, he said: “Thank you, class leader.”

He is the only person in my class who never called me Fu Jin.

I almost get touched and shed tears, it has been long time no one called me “class leader”, I missed it, I really get touched and put two thumbs up for him.

He flipped the book, facing Kang Yu and asked, “Kang Yu, I want to ask you about this question, please teach me.”

At the other side, Kang Yu nodded, perhaps thought he is nice person so Kang Yu must help him.

But who knows what Kang Yu thought in his head, he ignored him and said, “No time!!”

I puzzled, normally Kang Yu won’t act like this.

Compare to me Ji Jie Xin more confused and puzzled, “why?”

He also wants to know why Kang Yu act that way, his face showed dissatisfaction.

This moment, Xiao Fan approaching me and said, “Miao Miao, the day after tomorrow will be Xiao Shuang and Da Shuang birthday, this afternoon I will go with Xu Ying to buy present for them, will you joining?”

“Birthday!!?” I thought for moment, I count and count, it really. 23 December really Da Shuang and Xiao Shuang birthday, hurried I replied, “Go, go, I join!!!”

I am types of person who focus easily to be distracted, immediately I already forgot about Ji Jie Xin's matter, I followed Xiao Fan heading to Xu Ying's seat to discuss what stuff will be given as birthday present.

When I still in the middle discussing, Ji Jie Xin suddenly approaching me, stand up and called me, "Fu Jin, Fu Jin, Fu Jin....."

I dumbfounded my expression showed big question mark.

Crazy!

6.2

Chapter 6

Part 2 (Two)

Spouse's Column

I have waited him to call me Fu Jin ten times, then I looked at Kang Yu direction, I saw him waving his hand.

Ji Jie Xin stopped to call me, obediently walk to Kang Yu's direction.

I have heard Kang Yu said, "Actually to solve this question is like"

I don't understand with the situation so I get back to the place where I stood before, I want to ask Ji Jie Xin what he has done before.

After I have waited him until he done, he sees me, his face showed happy expression and said, "Fu Jin, I have done. Please have your seat, please have your seat."

I become more confused, why he called me Fu Jin non-stop, I glared at him, hinting him to change the way he addressed me.

He doesn't grasp my hint, perhaps he thought I mind with him who sat in my seat, so he used his sleeve to clean the chair, and said: "Fu Jin, please take your seat."

Seat your head ah! I used more power to glare him.

Change the way you address me, you are the only person who is not infected, keep on preserving ah.

But he does not respond, he tidy up his books, he scratching his head as if nothing happen and walk away.

My eyebrow frowned into one, confused and at loss.

What he means, what this mean.

I looked at Kang Yu's direction, I sensed something amiss.

Kang Yu is leisurely tidy up his pencil case, whether is only my mis-perception or not, he seems so happy, compare to previous unhappy expression is unlikely

matched, now he showed very relaxed gesture.

Perhaps, he realized my attention toward him and then he turned his head, said: "What?"

"What and What! It is me who wants to know. What is going on?" I pointed at Ji Jie Xin direction, "What have you do to him?"

Kang Yu showed his innocent expression, blinked and winked his eyes looked at me, "I taught him the subject."

"I don't talk about this, I want to know why he called me Fu Jin."

He even showed more his innocent expression, "everyone is calling you Fu Jin."

"No.... I don't mean this, before, he still called me class leader, but how could suddenly he change the way he addressed me." the previous one and just now only different couple minutes, furthermore, during this minutes, Ji Jie Xin was sat at your side.

Kang Yu with boring expression looked at me and then said, "How can I know, I were not him, how about you ask him by yourself."

This is one good idea.

I seriously want to go to ask him.

But when Ji Jie Xin sees me, before I ask, he still keeps on calling me Fu Jin, Fu Jin, Fu Jin.

At the last called of Fu Jin, I lost my interest to ask him.

Chapter 7 (7.1)

Chapter 7

Part 1 (One)

The difference between man and dog

I am types of kid that does not have any particular interest, even though I have, it will only last three minutes, that is the longest. But reading comic books and pet dog are exceptional because I can withstand it no matter how boring I feel.

Winter holiday coming, as if mouse that fall to granary, I spent my days reading comic books. I could spend my time to the point skipping my meals and sleep time, perhaps, I still able to make my time for dancing waltz with Cai Xi.

Dancing waltz with Cai Xi, this kind of thing, just according to my little sister said, I am so similar with unicellular organism.

Actually, I did not have so much difficulty, I just need to make Cai Xi stands up, put his in front legs into my shoulder, just not too underestimated him as four legs animal with height not more than my hip bone, once he lifted his in front leg...

Aiya, he is remarkably alike 170cm handsome man, with my 163cm height, we just so compatible standing together side by side.

I even could hug Cai Xi's waist, inside my home garden I could move him freely, and actually the waltz was not more than random movement.

Although there was no music, but I still enjoyed my time dancing with him.

Cai Xi also seems to like this kind of exercise, every time when I felt satisfied and enough, he acted as if not enough, every time I turned by back, he would follow and climb to my back while putting his front leg to my shoulder, he put his weight on me, licking me, as if begging me to stay, helplessly, if this kind of thing occurs, I would dance one more time with him, when he not aware, I quietly walked away.

The life during winter break, others than reading comics and playing with dog, I just eat and sleep, sleep and eat, sit down while counting the days in calendar, looking forward for new year, looking forward the day to get new year's pocket money.

During that time, there were no many entertainment places, even when you were really serious wanting to have fun, the available place such as zoo, roller skating, Boom Boom cars, all of these were the only place to get entertainment during my generation.

The second week Monday of winter holiday, the usual home-welcoming activity, other than the home-welcoming activity the rest was winter homework. If want to meet classmates, chatting, during that time telephone still something rare that's why school still the best alternative place for meeting each other.

On the way home after home-welcoming activity, Xiao Fan gave idea to visit West Theme Park Zoo on the following day, she asked me whether I wanted to join or not, I immediately nodded as agreed to join because I didn't want to stay at home for such long time. It was not easy for me to spread my wing and get my freedom to go-out and playing.

But, on the second day, I have regretted.

"Why are you coming?" standing in front of the West Theme Park Zoo, my hand was trembling pointed at Kang Yu's nose.

Kang Yu looked unhappy, "Why can I come!"

"Because today my girl's day. (the day for me to spend with my fellow good sisters.)" He as the only man why should follow us?

He sneered, "You turn your back, see! Is this... that you called as Girl's day with your fellow good sister?"

I dumbfounded for moment, and then I turned my head to in front, suddenly my head filled with three black-lines.

This...

As I seen, Xiao Shuang was flirting with the next class student, Meng Xiao Dong. Fan Juan was with her table-mate (student that shares table with), Huang

Yan Yong... for time being it considered just like that, Da Shuang biggest suitor, Zhang Lin was followed her, beside Liu Li Jun, stood the person who looked little bit stupid but also one of school pretty boy, Yu Wei, Xu Ying was the most awesome, she was surrounded by four men.

Added Kang Yu and me...

Suddenly I felt as if being thundered in light-day.

Kang Yu walked closer to me, "So, do you understood now?"

I felt dumbstruck, glared and nodded my head.

Understood! Really and very well, this fellow sister-hood day, actually was turning into pairing and dating activity.

I was squatting, looking for somewhere to make circle in ground...muttered, "Why you still..."

He heard it, he said, "I come only for ice skating."

How could I dare to say no, that why I just pouted, said nothing and ignored him.

Immediately I want to leave, but Kang Yu—his expression as if said, if I leave then I just coward, his expression stopped my feet to move and leaving the place so I stopped back to the current place where I stood before.

7.2

Chapter 7

Part 2 (Two)

The difference between man and dog

Bought the 5cents ticket, everyone happily went inside the Theme Park, during winter the garden wasn't really has nice view, the yellowish lawn grasses which mowed similar like paddy field, if not because crowded by people, this place really desolated, but fortunately there are still trees on the edge of the artificial lake and also flower bud, giving little bit colorful, without winds, the blue-green lake water reflecting the colorful dress silhouette of the crowded that passing by and also adding this color for that place.

When everyone is considering where to play, I looked for bench and sat down, grieved myself because has wronged and befriend with.

"How about we go to the skating?" Xiao Fan gave her first idea.

"I want to play Boom Boom car." Liu Li Jun said by pointing the red color ceiling.

"We want to see panda." Da Shuang and Xiao Shuang said in unison.

Instead of giving her opinion, Xu Ying small beautiful face showed irritated expression because of "chirping" voice of the men that surrounded her.

It seems that, we (Miao Miao and Xu Ying) were the only victim, caused by this activity.

Everyone has their own ideas, at the moment whose idea should be listened to, in the class Kang Yu is someone highly respected, therefore when Xiao Fan spotted him say nothing, she asked, "Kang Yu, how about you?"

Kang Yu who is leaning at tree trunk, indolent as if not really awake, being asked, he opened his eyes, everyone is trusting on him, expecting good idea from him.

Suddenly he glanced at me, his eye seems flashed bright. I have got a feel inexplicable goosebumps.

He slowly opened his mouth, "Just separate playing, everyone can play whatever they want to play, after two hours, everyone just..." he pointed at road sign, "We will gather at Food court."

Playing in separate? I feel excited, at the moment I have forgot about that uncomfortable feeling; suddenly I feel this also one of good idea.

Xiao Fan said: "Not too good, everyone is coming together, but still playing separately..."

Xiao Shuang and Da Shuang also thought not really good, "En, how about we play rock-paper-scissors, whoever win, then we follow the winner."

The others starting to chime, I feel.... No, stubborn, hastily I jumped from chair.

"Well, what is no good about it, I think just do as he said, we going out because we want to have fun, I am the class leader, all of you should listen to me."

Everyone realized what I said quite logical, everyone is nodding as sign they are agreed.

Inside my heart, secretly I delighted, extremely happy, my purpose is to make distant with Kang Yu, I made my excited fist said: "I want to go to house pet, who want to follow me."

Inside the house pet there are many doggies, one of my most favorite place, the place that Kang Yu won't go, he has said before that his purpose coming here for ice skating.

After I said, no one was responding on me.

Xiao Fan said, "I still better go to ice skating." After she said, she pulled Huang Yan Yong went with her.

While Xiao Shuang and Da Shuang were dragging their own partner heading to see panda, "Well, we are going to the panda house."

Liu Li Jun and Yu Wei who excited, heading to the Boom Boom car arena,

waving at me, "Then, we met after two hours."

Xu Ying glanced at me with guilty, I understood, she scared dog, naturally she would not follow me, being surrounded by four men, she heading to circus section.

Suddenly I felt chilly and cold wind swept all over my body... my heart thumping, chilling because Kang Yu hasn't left, didn't this brat say that he wanted to play ice skating, I turned to see him.

Kang Yu laughed, said: "Let's go, let's go to pet house."

At the moment I felt...

**

Shanghai Xi Jiao park is established in 1989. It was a place that sale dogs and cats but not anything alike rare species. During that time, Shanghai did not have any pet shop, so that place could say the only place that sell animal. Those dogs can easily allowed to touch, to hug and played for people who is coming so that it similar alike mini zoo or pet house. Not alike today's pet shop, if we don't buy then we cannot touch the pet.

**

So the story goes...

Finally I went to the pet house with Kang Yu, once I arrived at the pet house, I saw many puppies and doggies. I gained my strength and soul back, very excited seeing those doggies, I came closer to them. When I stepped inside the pet house, carelessly I stepped on the Dog poop because I fend off the cold air, the air circulation was not good so that I felt little bit stinky. Some people said that dog always shared strange smell, I admitted this point but for those people who like dogs, the natural smell of dog, no matter how stink it is, the dog lover never bothered about it.

7.3

Chapter 7

Part 3 (Three)

The difference between man and dog

I run to pick one of the doggies that similar to fur ball. It was not real fur ball, it hairy and fat just similar like ball covered with fur. I caught it and felt so comfortable. I really felt enthusiastically playing with the dog while Kang Yu just stood aside seeing me.

Kang Yu crouched not far from me, with one of his fingers, he poked at that ball fur dog, “Why do you love this thing?”

“What do you mean by this thing? As you know, dog is the best buddy of human being.” I said to him while patting that little white fur.

“Ah, at the utmost, it only can be your best friend but will it able to “feed” you?” his nasty fingers touching the white fur, he touched it nose, not too strong but still made the little fur not uncomfortable.

I glared at him, “why should it “feed” me, as long as I feed it, then it is more than enough.”

He pouted his mouth, and then he seemed wanted to say something but I just lazy to hear him, so I ignored him, walking at the other side and played with another little dogs and cats. Suddenly my eyes spotted the rare cool Siberian husky dog, as I knew that dog is called the King of doggies which pet inside this pet house. Many people were so excited of it.

During that time, Siberian husky breed was considered as the rare breed. It has very cool eyes that looked demeanor, extremely handsome and very beautiful. I was so excited about this dog, quickly I put down the little fur ball and went to play with the astonishing Siberian husky.

King was really well-trained, he was so obedient.

I had completely got into my own world, my head was filled with all handsome

doggies, muttering, “Oh handsome, how can you be such handsome ah, you have soft fur, also this well-build muscle, woah, also your neck coat, too perfect, simply to say you are an ideal prince in my heart.”

He has such beautiful pair of eyes, it were cartoon, I believe his two eyes were more beautiful than red quasi, it moved my heart. I used my face to brush it cheek, I really wanted to bring it home.

At this moment, I had forgotten about Kang Yu, the person outside my world.

Kang Yu eyes gleaming brightly but I knew his eyes not shared similar gleamed with my eyes, that eyes was flashing envious and hate.

“Would dog can be better than man?”

“Cih, how can man compare with dog?” so what if I love dog.

Kang Yu walked to my side, he gritting his teeth to vent his anger, but because I didn’t respond to him, suddenly he became silent.

He has glared me for such long time, and then took long breathe, he used kind of manner as if lecturing me, said: “How can you be such stupid, even this difference you are not know.”

“Difference?” I tilted my head, “What kind of difference?”

He was getting his way, very patience, said: “you said you have man, you still treat him as dog but will you able to make dog as your man?”

I frowned, no matter how I heard this words I felt something amiss.

“So that...” he stood up, pulled me along, “You should make distance with dog.”

I got frustrated, “Kang Yu, does you hate dog?” I thought he likes dog, if not why he followed me to here.

“Before, I like dog little, but now I hate it to death!”

“Why?” I asked him.

He turned to look at me, his face really dark, his eyes emitting dangerous aura, swept on me and then he turned back, as if he hinting on me.

This kind of mood, as if I owed him money.

I stubborn to walk in front of him, as if I didn't see him, but he also ignored me.

Kang Yu this man really such stubborn as stone, if I run in front of him then he would get faster as wind run in front of me.

I also have bad temperamental, I just not believe I could not win over him in running.

I had hardened my heart to win over him, persistently to run, he is tall and strong, if I really want to win over him, this won't be easy for me. I always believe there are ways to rome so if I could not use main street, I still have the little rat street no matter what, I must win over him!

At this moment, he did not have much spirit as I was, he stood a head me, showed as if there was something, secretly I peek on him.

He stood not far from me, he has gloomy expression, his mouth said something: "If in the future my love enemy is dog, how can I mingle in this life, you little stupid!!"

Uh....

This is first time I felt alike little bird got trapped....

Chapter 8 (8.1)

Miao Miao finally realized something about Kang Yu...

Finally...

No matter how naive, ignorance and dummy Miao Miao, after all, yeah, after one by one the clue given by Kang Yu finally she realized it.

Chapter 8

Part 1 (One)

The changes in the eyes

I admitted that I little bit stupid, but it does not mean I am dumb, but why once at three days I have encountered small problem and five days got the big ones, suddenly I have encountered many problematic things, suddenly I came to understand.

Suddenly I came to understand, that I became stupid.

Was it... was it...

Suddenly my brain acknowledge something, things that suddenly made my face hot and flushed, I covered my face with my hand, I just didn't want to believe, shook my head, just wanted to shook away my thoughts.

But...no matter how I didn't want to think about it, it just became clearer and popped out, hunting me.

Does...does... Kang Yu... really... like me?

My face, my ears hot and red, chilling that cause me to tremble, hurried embedded my face to pillow, and then I swear to myself.

Ou Yang Miao Miao, you are too lascivious, even this kind of thing you dare to think of.

Shame to death, shame to death...

I have embedded my face half day in pillow until to the point I can't breathe anymore, then I lift up my face, continuing shaking my head, I tell myself, impossible, absolutely impossible, every times I met Kang Yu, I always end up being embarrassed so there no reason he likes me.

But... but..

Those words Kang Yu said before, no matter how I thought and considered about it... too vague.

Vague... the wording make one's feel shame.

I feel so ashamed so that I not dare move and stay at my bed while holding my pillow...

After I rolling myself for while, I stopped, I feel little bit dizzy, get up and sit at my bed, no matter how I thought about it suddenly I become anxious.

How about asked Kang Yu directly?

No, I can't. If it is not... then I just become someone who thought the love is reciprocated, how I face others in the future.

If I don't ask, I feel something stuck in my heart, it uncomfortable to death.

I admitted this ostrich feeling, I dare not but also afraid.

This is only my thought, he never told me so I afraid when I asked him and then it would be awkward. He and I are not only table-mate, we also student committee member, moreover we still need to get along for three years, so how should I deal with the future days.

Frankly to say, if he really likes me, what he likes from me?

This is my main problems that make me think over and over, I am not beautiful, I tried to see from other perspective, when I was little kid, people said that I was quite beautiful, everyone who met me said that I looked like western doll (bisque doll types), have curly hair, big and round eyes, I was really super cute beautiful little kid, but as time goes.... I grew up and whenever I looked my reflection in front of mirror, I doubt.

I take a look long time in front of mirror then my conclusion is—my splendid beautiful gorgeous look had left me for long ago!!

The cute and beautiful me has long disappeared, because my weak body, the initially chubby little girl gradually get thinner, my chin turned be V-shape which scare people to death, even my eyes are still big but my face suddenly thin so my eyes looked alike cow's eyes. To be honest it little bit scary, my skin milky white, but no that healthy pinkish blush so that I always looked like malnutrition girl. As

additional I have high metabolism, with height 163 cm my weight only 85 pounds. No matter how I looked, I not more than bamboo stick.

I have messed my hair then I even looked more terrible like ghost.

I climbed to the in front of mirror,

Grieved,

All of this just tragedy...

At this time, the room's door opened, my little sister Ou Yang Yan Yan who is licking the lollipop which similar to pearl, "Big sister, borrow me the correction pen fluid (Type-X)."

I am still grieving in my thought about my youth, I don't have energy for her.

Yan Yan looked askance at me, this kind of habit looked so abnormal, "Are you crazy?"

"I am not!" I turned my head, facing her make wry face.

Yan Yan hurried passing me heading to my study desk looking for the white correction fluid, laughed and said: "If you are not crazy, how can your hair such messy alike bird nest."

I hurried to comb my hair, angrily stood up, "None of your business!"

Just now I was shocked by my appearance, but when I saw Yan Yan, inside my heart there was "Sour" feel, it clearly both of us are twin that looked exactly same, but how come she looks more beautiful than I am, not only her body shape, her rosy white smooth skin, what is called as maidenhood, there is nothing in myself that reflect those things.

Completely incompatible, so incompatible.

This is real tragedy.

Yan Yan seldom to see me angry, even frustrated, "What happen? Why you look as if to be embittered?"

I turned back my head, "Humph!"

She shrugged, she intending to leave.

But I just pulled her back.

She turned her head, frowned and asked: "What?"

I am "chichicha" (mumbling), "I have...have...something...to ask you."

The current me, I need someone to be my trash bin, or else I won't be able to sleep tonight.

8.2

Chapter 8

Part 2 (Two)

Changes in the Eyes

Yan Yan rolled her eyes, she and I, do we actually twin that born from same ovum, once she rolled her eyes, I have understood what she wants to do.

“I can help you to do your winter homework.” My heart tearing said.

Her eyes suddenly shine brightly, “Deal!” after she said, she kicked her slippers off, climbing into my bed, sit cross leg, licking her lollipop, smiling at me, “Said!”

I hesitated for while, this kind of thing and also not yet confirm, if I said would it be something so embarrassed, but if I don’t say it, I feel terrible bad.

“You listen, cannot tell mother and father!” forewarning before started.

During this time, the puppy love is more dangerous than ferocious tiger!

She nodded.

I have doubted for minutes, but later I said all the detail about Kang Yu to her.

While Yan Yan listened, she bites crack her lollipop, inside her mouth there is cracking voices.

After I said, I asked her, “You say, is he like me or not.”

Yan Yan looked in depth thought said, “There is the possibility!”

“You think there might be possibility!” I shouted faster climbing at bed, “Well, tell me, what he likes from me!”

Yan Yan looked as if weigh up on me, she frowned, “I also questioned, what he likes about you?”

What kind of words that my little sister said? Is she still my biological sister.

I felt little bit down, “What do you mean?”

She could sense I am getting angry, hurried she said, “Don’t be angry, what I am telling you also honest words, simply to say your looked more alike single cell

animal...

I made fist and hit aiming her head, “You are that single cell animal!”

Yan Yan touched her head, gritting, “If you dare you go ask, ask him, does he likes you or not?”

“I don’t want. It shame to death, who knows whether he real or not...really... like me...if I was mistaken him, what should I do, if he just play prank with me what should I do, you just don’t know how...he... always bully me.”

Yan Yan disdained: “Qie, it clearly you have chicken-gut, not dare to ask, still pretending!”

I hit her head once again but she avoided.

“If not how about this...” suddenly she blinked at me, “I help you to go and check.”

I suspicious asked, “See? How will you check?”

“He He, does next week Tuesday is your second home-welcoming activity, I will go with you, I will hide in your school gate, help you to check on him.”

I am not that stupid, “It’d be strange, I see you just wondering and want to know how’s he looks, moreover inside your heard you must said, after all that fool is the person who likes me.”

Yan Yan showed hurtful expression, “How can you say your little sister, I do it because of you!”

“Moved aside, do you think you have golden eyes of Sun Wu Kong (monkey king in the journey of the west story)?” unhappily I refuted.

While she acted alike the adult, “This you are not understood, to know whether a man like you or not, you should see his eyes.”

“Eyes! How to see?” this kind of ideas kind of refresh for me, I really curious of it, should learn it, if I can see by myself, why should I ask her to do.

“You stupid to death, even I said, you must not understand, you want, or don’t want, just told me.” she props her chin looking at me, with kind of extraordinary looked.

I felt little bit doubt, I could sense something amiss with Yan Yan, but I really cannot tell, but if she become the spectator, perhaps she might able to see it.

After think for while, finally I have decided, still better than not.

"Well, but you shouldn't make any mischief." This point I still need to remind her.

"No problems, so that's the deal."

Yes."

"Well, when will you do my winter homework?"

"....."

I almost forget about this.

My grieve!

8.3

Chapter 8

Part 3 (Three)

Changes in the Eyes

Finally Tuesday was coming, I feel so restless coming to school, Yan Yan said that she would hide inside the garden in front of school, asking me to lure Kang Yu out, said that I have words for him, that's more than enough.

Naturally I did as she said, but once I saw him, I felt little bit awkward.

Fortunately, he was not really aware.

After hand over the winter homework to the teacher, still need to hear some words such as spring festival should be careful, after that home-welcoming activity dismissed.

It was not difficult to walk out together from school, after all everyone was still need to pass the school gate to go home, the problem was the word that I should say, I have thought so hard, to be honest, I really didn't want to get out.

When my eyes spotted the school gate, I felt so worried, my brain was trying to find something, as the result, I didn't see my way, I walked zigzag...

Suddenly my back was pulled by someone, I turned my head, so that was Kang Yu.

"What are you doing, how can you walk without seeing the pathway." He pulled me aside, dragged me to one sides of school gate.

I just realized, I have walked almost near the lotus pond, just less than one step, if not because Kang Yu pulled me, perhaps I would fall.

I shook my head, I not dared to take look of him directly, but if not now, but if not today I didn't look at him, I really felt little bit embarrassed, actually I just thought what should I say to him but suddenly the opportunity just come.

I thank him with loud voice: "Thank you, Thank you!"

Finally I could speak.

Kang Yu looked me with suspicious eyes sight, perhaps he sensed something

different from me.

I dry-laugh said, “He He, go home, go home!” I made the first stride forward.

Kang Yu did not question me, but he spoke with some of the men beside me, seems that they wanted to play soccer, while I took a look at the school garden, seeing Yan Yan waving her hand, making an OK signed.

I was in perturbed state of mind, finally everything settled.

But once I thought about Kang Yu whether he likes me or not, my heart weighed, just didn't know how to say, there was slightly fear, but also excited.

When no one paid attention to me, I heading to school garden, this garden in front of the school gate quite restricted, so it really a great spot to hide, in here you could see the in front school without being found out. Yan Yan and I who were hiding inside the garden were waiting for Kang Yu to leave so that we dared to get out.

“How?” I hurried asked her.

Yan Yan even said, “I am hungry, I want to eat stinky tofu (strong smelling preserved beancurd).”

I kicked her leg, “Eat what stinky tofu, hurry up tell me.”

She ignored me, she walking toward the store that sold stinky tofu.

I hurried to catch up with her, this little brat must be on purpose.

Unable to find a way out, finally I took out my purse, buy her one stinky tofu, “You can say it.”

“I also want to eat lamb kebab!”

I made a fist, I told myself to endure, she just did not have any pocket money left to spend, pouted mouth, so that she tried to spend my money.

I bought!

During this time, there was nearby stall that sell snacks and other junk foods, it cost quite cheap, eight stinky tofu cost 5 cents, one stick of lamb kebab one cent, there still ficus carica fruit, plum candy, maltose sweet, all of them one cent per items, one month pocket money has spent for hers all.

I really didn't know how Yan Yan could eat that much, she ate along the way home, its pity my fat purse suddenly turn to be bone purse.

Arrived at home, I dragged her to my room, put my hand in my hips, my eyes open wide glared at her, "will you say or not!"

Yan Yan wiped clean all that greasy things in her mouth, drank the orange juice that we bought on the way home, finally after she satisfied, looking at me with serious face, "I have seen him!"

"What did you see?" I dragged my chair facing her, I really wanted to know already.

Yan Yan has little hiccup, that's perhaps... she has eaten too much things, I could not endure so I passed her the orange juice.

Finally she stopped hiccup, looked at my eyes, she said seriously, "HE—SO--HANDSOME!"

I put back the orange juice and then I used my hand to strangle her neck, "I strangle you to death such heartless girl!"

She blinking her eyes, "why you so panic, I haven't done."

This time I quite smarter, I still strangle her but not using strength, just touched her neck, "Faster, said! Or else I would really strangle you to death."

"Alright...alright..., I said..." she lifts up her head, looked so serious, "I have seen, seen the changing in his eye sight."

I frowned, "what changing?"

"Kang Yu seems to have good eyes color alike healthy yellowish clear urine, but when looked at your eyes it alike clear saliva dirt with mud eyes"

Take my life!

This Yan Yan really bad in describing something, I knew but... the way she described about him really...

I don't understand at all!

"Please speak human language!"

She—you are really dummy, this you still don't know!

I really not understood, I shook my head.

“He really likes you my big sister!”

This word, I understood!

After I heard and understood... my face turned red.

Who can tell me, what should I do next?

My head numb, my face red while my hand still grabbed Yan Yan, standby to strangle her, “I still want to strangle you to death!”

Chapter 9 (9.1)

Chapter 9

Little sister in law got bribe

Kang Yu likes me...Kang Yu likes me...Kang Yu likes me...

This word as if Mantra for cursing, I didn't even thought the spring festival just passed that way, even when I received red pocket money, this thing not that excited anymore.

Does he really like me?

Likes me? Likes me?

Yan Yan said likes, but he did not tell me...

It so frustrated argh!!!!

As for me, who is someone has Comic and Animation-complex, Now I feel my eyes have laser sight that able to destroyed the flowers and plants just alike the drawing in the comic or the animation movies.

One side I like it, another side I dislike it....

If there's leaf or flowers, I might tear one by one to testify, whether I like or dislike...

Therefore...

And so...

Such and such....

All were moving in same circle.

This kind of manners might destroy all the flowers and plants for the perplexed girl. Because of this, every day I got punishment by my mother by pinched my ear. While my dad just seeing how I destroying his rare plant that he had planted for 12 years, relentless facing wind and shedding tears.

At the end, all my new year's pocket money is confiscated.

Tragic, could not more any tragic.

Aside felt headache there was not any better thing so that I just lying on my bed as if I were corpse.

During dinner time, my ear is pinched by my mom in living room, seeing the big fish and big meat, but tasteless, every time when I thought the school would start, my heart got complicated, did not know what to do, I just ate so little and then I kept moving on my deathly life, but there were time, it was during the dinner time suddenly my mom made announcement that made me rather to vanish.

"Miao Miao, next semester Yan Yan will move to your school!"

I almost chocked until the rice out from my nose, "Hah!"

"What Ah, you better eat properly!" my mom glared at me.

"It's not, why should she moves?" I put down my chopsticks, ignored my mom deathly glared, I just scream asked her.

Mom answered me, "The education level in the suburban not bad compare to the urban areas but for taking the high school entrance examination, of course the Urban area school is better since the education level and standard are higher moreover transfer before second semester starting is much advantage."

I knew about it, that time I was following my mother's resident registration, while Yan Yan followed my daddy because of Min Hang district in Shanghai, during 90's Min Hang district was suburban area, simply to say it not more than village, but no one knew that after the ten of years suddenly it changed to be shanghai best residential area.

This is Shanghai, the education standard and level in urban area is significantly better than the suburban, as long as wanting to join the entrance examination, there would be very different treatment so in order to be fair, it better join the urban area.

I understood very well my mom difficulties, that time when Yan Yan followed dad, mom was extremely opposed about it, but daddy thought he has two

daughters but if no one followed him, he felt so insecurity, they argued so long, mom was stubborn but later took one step back and let it be.

I didn't care such thing, let Yan Yan transfer to same school with me, this called troublesome.

Based on her character... enslaving me every day in school, or might... might, this little brat would go and find Kang Yu...

Suddenly I could feel my hands and feet trembling.

I took a glance to Yan Yan, she really enjoying her meal, as if there was nothing matter with her.

Not good, this was not good.

I could imagine, the future of my Junior High school would be so tragic.

"Yan Yan, are you agree?" I gathered all my courage to ask.

She put much red braised pork to her mouth so that she could not speak clearly and she just nodding.

I stirred up, screaming, "No, you cannot!"

"What cannot!" Mom roared at me, "what is so not good both of you go to school together, you this little girl recently seem to lost your thought, Yan Yan has agreed, so why you worried so much?"

I could feel my stomach boiled, what I have done just to protect my future.

I tried to start with "friend card", "Yan Yan, transferring to new school, you cannot play with your classmate, don't you feel sad?"

After transferred to new school, everything should be start from beginning, everyone might stranger, during the break time would be so distressing, although based on Yan Yan characters she would be able to find new friend and adapt well, but... her current classmate, at least she already has emotional attachment, and once she transferred to new school it would be regretful.

Who's know that Yan Yan, after she has swallowed her red braised pork, opened her mouth said, "I won't."

This girl was really heartless.

She wiped her mouth, continued, “It not like I won’t meet them anymore, during holiday I still can play with them, moreover...” she turned her eyes said, “I feel not bad transfer school because there must be many excite things awaiting me.”

Excited things?

Cold sweat streaming down, just afraid as what I thought.

“It decided!” mom slapped the table, there was no way to reject, on contrary she said to me, “You are big sister, you should act like big sister, later when the new semester start, not only you should study good but you also need to take care your little sister.”

Taking care this little brat, did she still need me to take care of her? Aiyyaa, it should be me who being taking care.

“Mom, I think...” I still wanted to fight back.

But mom continued, throw me sharp words, “Speak less nonsense, faster eat!”

I really wanted to cry, I felt I didn’t have place in this house.

After I done eating, I dragged Yan Yan to my room, I hit her head and said, “You can transfer to my school, but I warned you not to find Kang Yu, do you listen!”

Yan Yan eating an apple, her mouth sounded chachacha voice, but her eyes innocently looked at me.

“Don’t you think I don’t know, you...you... have something!”

After she ate her apple, she walked to the trash bin to throw it, and then take another apple and keep on eating, her expression was so innocent but she clearly not listen any of my words.

“I don’t care, you must not come to find Kang Yu.” This really was what I afraid of.

Just afraid this little brat would scrutinize me “kindly” to ask thing that I not dare to ask.

She was gnawing a pear, and also threw it to trash bin after done, again she...

I flared up, I didn't know where she got the banana, I really pissed off as if I wanted to skin her.

I just didn't understand how could she eat that much.

9.2

Chapter 9

Part 2 (Two)

Sister in Law got bribe

She did not angry but with her smiling eyes, she put her hands in my shoulder, “I understood, understood, why you are so noisy like old granny, nagging without ending, I go for study, you reassured.”

If I really not worrying that just strange, no matter what her expression and the way she speaking really could not make me at peace. Did I think too much?

“Are you sure?” Not sure but I still asked.

She nodded, “I am so sure, be reassured.”

“Really?” I still could not believe her.

“Really!” She answered me certainly.

I felt little bit at peace in my heart, but I still sensed there was something amiss, but again Yan Yan has made promised to me, she would not do anything that harm me, but I as her older sister also could not act too petty to her so I choose to believe her.

When new semester start, she finally transferred to my school so that we went to same school but different class, because she is the transferred student then she entered class 2-5.

This also make my heart little bit at ease.

But, the fact that I am twin, makes my classmate and also her classmate surprised, Xiao Fan, Da Shuang, Xiao Shuang, Liu Li Jun and Xu Ying are friends since we were in kindergarten, they have known before, so that there is no surprised of them.

When Kang Yu knew that I am twins, his reactions... perhaps shocked, little bit, but this shocking really not same, he gave me vibes as if “I pet dog in somewhere and born puppies without my knowing”, this kind of excitement feeling, perhaps.

This was so strange, I am twins but he is the one excited.

After first class ended, there were many boys who went to see my younger sister in class 2-5, and then after they back from seeing my younger sister, then they started to discuss about our appearance, they thought my younger sister was more beautiful than me.

I extremely angry until broke my third pencils.

Kang Yu also went, after he back, he looked at me but not like long face (disappointing), he looked in deep thought, suddenly I felt nervous and again I broke my pencil.

He glanced at me, said nothing, I felt uncomfortable.

During the class, he silently glanced at me, I realized he still in deep thought.

What kind of thought he has, did he also think that Yan Yan was more beautiful, or did he make mistake by liking me?

I pinched myself, what liked, he never told me that he liked me, why nervous, moreover I also not liked him, so there none of my business who he liked.

But no matter why, I felt little bit sour in my heart.

I forced myself to focus taking notes and breaking my pencil again, and then I opened my pencil case to take another pencil.

There is no pencil anymore!

“Take this!” Kang Yu gave me one of his pencils.

I doubted for seconds, but still took it, “Thank you!” and then I tried as if nothing matter me, continuing with my writing.

This class subject was History, our history teacher was keep on talking to himself since the class starting, he looks so addicted, not even realized whether the student listened to him or not, I looked at my notes, suddenly Kang Yu asked me, “What does your sister like usually?”

I glared at him, I almost broke his pencil, suddenly I felt as if something pierced into my heart, in order to conceal, I spoke quite harsh, and also glared him fiercely.

“Why you asked me?”

He answered me as it matter of course, "I just want to know."

I looked at him, my heart aching, I pouted, said: "Why should I tell you?"

"Does she also like dog?" he kept asking, he tried to get something from me.

I grieved and my heart ached, I even felt my eyes stung, I clenched the pencil tightly in my hand, I just writing my note, ignoring him.

I made strokes in my notes and suddenly I realized I wrote down three words in my history notebook—bad man.

Suddenly anxious, tore the page and shattered it.

Kang Yu saw me tearing the paper, not asked me but kept on asking his business.

After the class ended, I saw him going to class2-5 straightly.

I pissed off, I torn all the pages of my history notes, it shocked me, the last time notes also in this page, while next week would be exam, my current situation is called crying without tears.

When lunch time, the first thing I did, went to find Yan Yan for revenge... no, for lunch!

When I arrived at class 2-5, I realized Yan Yan was not in her class.

Frustrated, her lunch box still with me, what she would eat, in here she has not familiarized with anyone, impossible she not wait for me, while her classmate also didn't know where she about, I did not have any idea, so I just went to the canteen to re-heat my meals. Not better than death, on my way went back, I spotted Kang Yu and Yan Yan were having conversation under the tree which the distance not far and not really drawing others attention.

My first response was hiding, secretly looking at them.

But later, after I have thought for while, why should I hide, why should I secretly looking at them, I paused for while, holding my lunch box and hit my head, but my eyes sight just locked at them... didn't know why the scene piercing into my eyes...it pierce until I felt there was bitterness in my heart.

What was my brain thought, what were they talking about?

Abruptly there was something pop out in my mind.

Did Kang Yu fall in love with someone else?

When this thought pop out, I was shaking my head and hit it harder, so what if he fell in love with someone else, he never told me that he likes me.

But, what did this mean?

Did because my little sister more beautiful than me, so that he preferred her?

I squatted there, I felt my heart hurt and bitter, why I felt bitter and also why I felt hurt? I pulled my own hair, I kept on asking myself, what happen with me?

Both of them were still talking, I really hate both of them, I just wanted to smash the lunch box to them.

But I did not do it, I stood up, took another path, rushing walked away.

What the eyes did not see, the heart did not grieve over (idiom), pretended not see anything!

After arrived at my class, I sat on my own seat, looking at the lunch boxes which have very beautiful packaging, but I didn't have any appetite.

"Miao Miao, what happen, uncomfortable, why are you keep looking on your lunch box but not eat anything?" Xiao Fan asked.

I shook my head, "Nothing, I just don't have appetite."

"If you don't eat, let me help you to eat, I really love to eat red braised pork." Xiao Fan used her spoon to scoop the red braised pork into her lunch box.

"Don't take all, Yan Yan has not eaten." I used my chopstick to stop Xiao Fan.

"Talking about Yan Yan, why haven't seen her coming here to have lunch?" Xiao Shuang who sat beside while holding warm soup, asked me.

9.3

Chapter 9

Part 3 (Three)

Sister in Law got bribe

I pouted, “Who knows.”

My heart aching once I remembered, so that I put many red braised pork into Xiao Fan’s lunch box, “Take this, care less for her whether she eats or not!”

“What happen? Why angry?” Xu Ying chewing her food, asked. She chewed slowly because it was Xu Ying eating habit, she took about twenty time chewing once she ate for one spoon before she swallowed.

I used my chopstick to add more vegetable to lunch box, “nothing!”

Liu Li Jun looking at me as if thought something, said nothing, but her eyes sight was weird, it made me uncomfortable.

When I was asking her what she saw, suddenly Yan Yan made appearance.

“Big sister, I come to have lunch.” Her hand was holding Ham sausage.

Once she saw that the red braised pork in lunch box gone, she pissed off yelling, “Who, who ate my red braised pork!”

Xiao Fan placate, “Here, in here, I just ate it little bit.”

When I saw the Ham sausage in her hand, “Where the Ham sausage comes from?”

“Snack store.”

Snack store (Canteen) is the place in our school for the student who not have their breakfast or not taking their lunch. In there, they were selling small tarts, tea eggs (boiled egg with flavoring), ham sausages, fried chicken, and others snacks that able to fill the hunger stomach, during the summer it would sell something refreshing food such as Wa Wa Xue Gao (Baby cream tart), popsicles, snow white ices, something that we ate to refresh and cold down after the class ended, to satisfied self.

As I remembered, she didn’t have money, because her red pocket’s (Chinese

New Year money) had used to buy bike, while yesterday when she got pocket money from daddy, she has spent all her money, buying Chocolate, so where her money came from to buy Ham sausage.

Yan Yan has strong obsession with food, she talking to me while her hands pick up the chopstick and already grabbed some food from Xiao Fan's lunch box, Xiao Fan wasn't her match, the red braised pork has eaten, she also took some Xiao Fan's steam meat.

I didn't have any mood to ask about the ham sausage, I was at lost with my heart, but asked, "Just now I was looking for you, but you weren't there, where were you?"

She ate all the food in the lunch box, but still not stopped, she even took food from Xu Ying's lunch box, who asked her to eat such slow, after she heard what I was asking, her eyes rolled as if there were a laser beam.

"I was strolling at sport field, just to familiarize myself with the new environment."

"Alone?" although I hesitated but still I asked her.

Her mouth full with foods and have difficulty to speak, so that she just nodded her head.

Suddenly I felt my heart got chills and pain, she lied to me, she was with Kang Yu before.

I wanted to open my mouth to expose her lies, but...I didn't know as whom, my younger sister befriend with others, there was none of my right to control her, Kang Yu also not bad teenager or dangerous, so there was no reason for me to have objection.

I was sat in my seat, but suddenly I felt my eyes wet with tears.

After Yan Yan finished, she put the lunch box in front of me, "I have done."

After she said, she just run out.

While I didn't see Kang Yu walked inside.

My eyes wet with tears, it blurred my vision...

“Miao Miao, why are you crying?” Xiao Shuang anxious asked.

I touched my face, my hand touched my tears, I was shocked.

I cried.

Why I crying?

I didn’t understand with my mood, I lie down my face in my desk, not dare to lift my head up.

“Miao Miao, what happen to you? Are you sick?” Xiao Fan asked.

I stressed out said, “Nothing, I just...felt my heart aching.”

“Did your myocarditis (inflammation of heart muscle) relapse? Eat medicine, hurry up eat your medicine!” Da Shuang heading toward me, she was searching my desk and bag.

“I take warm water!” Xu Ying did not care with her lunch, she took her small cup, running to corridor.

Waiting for Xu Ying’s warm water, Xiao Fan raised my head up, forcing to feed me my medicine.

When I was in my primary school, I relapsed one time, all of them had experienced (witness) it before.

“Do we need to call teacher?” Xu Ying is someone who has chicken-gut, I cried and she also cried.

Liu Li Jun said, “She, it was not her sickness relapse but she is jealous!”

I was nervous, “Who...who... is jealous!”

“You death duck tight lips (reluctant to admit a mistake/truth)!” she despicable said, and then as if older sister, one feet put in chair, she liked to use this kind of way to give lesson, good from worse she actually was the secretary member, but somehow she acted like bad girl.

But this trick really worked for me, immediately I straighten my back, heard what she said.

“You dare to say, seeing Kang Yu with Yan Yan, your heart not aching, but why you took peek at them before.”

I shocked, said: “You... did you see it?” Just at one shot, the same as to admit.

The others chirping looking at me, “Miao Miao, you really are jealous!”

“I don’t, I don’t!” I firmed to deny.

“You are!” Liu Li Jun strongly stepped her feet down from chair, while the others just nodding their head.

“No, I don’t!” I strongly denied.

“You——are!” Liu Li Jun looked me with strange eyes sight, the others kept on nodding their head.

“I——really——don’t!” I stood up, stretch out my neck, facing her to make my denial.

She also didn’t want to lose, she stretched out her neck too. “You are really!”

If this continued, there would be “it’s have” and “It not” war.

9.4

Chapter 9

Part 4 (Four)

Sister in law got Bribe

I was wrong while they were right.

What this meant, I was forcing to admit!

After we debated, everyone face was red.

What were these people did.

It was good they were there, so I stopped crying, and also forgot my ache.

But still I would not admit I was jealous even beaten to death.

Why should I jealous?

I... I... not...like...Kang Yu!

After we done with debating for the entire afternoon, the bell ringing as sign the break time ended.

Liu Li Jun angered put down her feet, walking back to her seat, she turned her head and said, "You see and wait."

I was sweating cold bead, did it so fun to force other to admit being jealous?

When the bell rang, Kang Yu came back, as if he flied to his seat.

I was looked alike wife who has waited her husband came back to home for the entire night, with deep resentment I asked. "Where were you going?"

Kang Yu blinked his eyes, "didn't go anywhere."

I humped him, "If you dare you do, if not dare you admit."

"What?" Kang Yu sat in his seat, his face passed mine asked me.

"Go die! Go die!" I looked at his face angrily.

Kang Yu was face darkens, perhaps he thought to act aggressively but teacher has came in, he endured.

After that on the next subjects, he and I were in cold war, none of us spoke, we even made border line, PK each other.

It was not easy to go through until the school ended, I carried my back, swayed it but not purposely swayed to his head.

I was not intended, but I didn't make any explanation, glared him, and then I walked away.

After I walked out from class, I saw Yan Yan flee as if she were butterfly, I thought she was looking for me, but who knew that once she opened her mouth was, "Kang Yu, I want to eat stinky tofu!"

My face darkens.

What this mean?

Kang Yu was at my back, hurried said, "Okay!"

My face even darken than before.

What? Very soon they acted open and aboveboard, without any fear of consequences.

I just wanted to vent my anger, but Yan Yan has pulled Kang Yu to the small store that selling stinky tofu in front of school.

Kang Yu was really being dragged by her.

Suddenly I felt as if they didn't care about me! I extremely angry followed them!

As predicted Yan Yan really could eat, after bought stinky tofu, the lamb kebab, also bought many fermented sweet, the plums, apricot, moreover all was paid by Kang Yu Since when both of them became that close!

Well, I was boiled when I saw Yan Yan pointed many kinds of sweet syrup which paid by Kang Yu, I pulled her away, stood in front of Kang Yu, "I also want to eat!"

Kang Yu stared blankly for while, and then with stern face, "You are not allowed to eat!"

I protested, yelled, "Why? You treated both of us differently!"

He shouted at me, “you are already so skinny, still eat junk food, you better obedient, go home to have meal!”

“I don’t want to be control by you!” I yelled him back.

He was angry to the max, glared me fiercely.

I didn’t show any weakness, I glared him back even fiercer.

There were lot of students who buying things, they saw both of us glaring each other, surrounded us to see the crowded.

Yan Yan stood at beside, she felt little bit awkward, dragged me, “Sis, you stop glaring, go home.”

“I don’t want to go home!” I told her, I continued to glare Kang Yu, but kept on dragging by Yan Yan to the quiet place.

Kang Yu naturally came to follow us.

I have lost my rationality, today I wanted to make everything clear, my head was in heat, I pulled his tie, yelled, “You say, do you like or dislike me?”

Kang Yu dumfounded, and then he stopped glaring at me, I could see the flame in his bright eyes, it flashed looked at me, but he said nothing.

I was so nervous, “You rotten bastard, you are falling for someone else!”

“Falling for someone else?” The brilliant shine of Kang Yu’s eyes suddenly dim, he glared at me again, coldly said, “Whom?”

I shouted louder, “My younger sister!”

Yan Yan dumbfounded the junk food in her hand fell down to the ground.

I was so death brain (coward), since I have already said, I could only make unreasonable scene to conceal my embarrassment, squatted on the ground crying and said, “both of you were bullied me! bought things for my younger sister but not bought for me, what this mean if this not called as bullied!”

“Sis, you don’t be like this, you are misunderstood!” Yan Yan also squatted.

“I have eyes, I can see!” I yelled at her, and then I looked at Kang Yu, but he said nothing.

It much better if he didn't see, but once he took a look it shocked, Kang Yu stood there alike demon king.

He deathly glared at me, as if he would be exploding, finally he shouted at me.

"Foolish, didn't you see that I was bribing the future sister in law?"

"Hah?"

I squatted on the ground dumbfounded.

Suddenly my brain in process, this mean....

Little sister in law?

What did he mean with sister in law, was it, the wife elder or younger sister.

Yan Yan is my younger sister!

That mean...I... not...

My face dried, while my brain suddenly flashing back all the scenes.

It seems I have asked him, did he like me or dislike me.

I asked?

It was me who asked?

Argh!!!!

Suddenly my brain recalled everything.

I stood, my face red, looked at him and then I run as fast as... I just flee to go home...

Ashamed... shameless not dare to see other!

Chapter 10 (10.1)

Chapter 10

The Official Relationship

I thought my running skill has reached to the point of perfection, usually it takes 25 minutes from school to way home but now I have spent only half of it, perhaps the antelope could not beat my speed, once I got home, I walked three stairs at once, running into my bed room.

I shut my door, I locked, I climbed to my bed, I covered myself with quilt, make arch, wrapped myself tightly as if wind could not break into.

My face argh!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

You dead meat!

My figure argh!!!!!!!!!

You are so lacking!!!!

Hit my head.....

About ten minutes, in front of the door, there was Yan Yan's voice.

"Sis, open the door!"

I felt so frustrated wrapping inside the quilt, flurried answered her, "Not open!"

Outside the door there was no more sound, after few minutes, I heard the sound of click, door opened.

I unwrapped the guilt, angrily looking at Yan Yan who holding the spare key, this was the spare key that kept by mom in the drawer inside living room.

Did this little brat cannot leave me alone by myself for moment?

Yan Yan used her fingers to play with that spare keys, swaying and circling, she laughing looked at me, "Go crazy?"

I was so angry so I wrapped myself back into the quilt.

Even inside the guilt I could not see anything, but I still able to hear Yan Yan's laughing voice.

"Big sis, how it felt being jealous?"

My face burning hot, I unwrapped the guilt, yelling to her, "I am not!"

"No, it's strange! Seeing how you acted just now, when you pushed me down you have used so much strength, see my arms is hurt everywhere." She gently rubbing every part of her body that being pushed down, frowned and complained.

"I... I... just... could not endure my anger!" I stammered trying to give explanation, "Who asked him to buy you food but.... But he didn't buy it for me!"

Yan Yan was sitting in the chair, she stretched her legs out, act as if everything just nothing special, "Why angry? Brother in law buying food for sister in law, where was the problem?"

Brother...in...law!

This way of addressed as if the explosion of bomb, it exploded until I felt all my face filled with red blood, while my head as if the steam train that bursting the smoke, "You... you.. don't burst nonsense!"

Yan Yan smiled, "As proverb said, the mouth that has been fed but others is soft, the hands that received doesn't reach (idiom), [one is partial to those from whom presents have been accepted], this brother in law I have acknowledged, or else in the future I would not have any free meals."

"You... because of...few of junk foods, you are selling...me?"

"He he...." Yan Yan not even little bit reflect on herself, she dragging her chair closer to me, blinking her eyes, furtively said, "Sis, you guessed, what was brother in law said after you left?"

My face turned red, "I have told you not called brother in law, you still called!"

This way of addressing just...too shocking!

Yan Yan pouted her mouth, "humph, if you don't want to know, then I just

take my leave." She stood up, stretching herself when walking, "Well, I back to my room doing my homework."

She turned her back, preparing to get back to her room, but I just could not endure... could not endure, my hand to pull her back.

Yan Yan was frowning looked at my hand.

I stretching back my hand, nervously clutching my fingers, I could feel as if my blood rushed into my face, "He...he.. what did he say?"

But Yan Yan was spreading out her palm, stretched in front of me, "Give me five dollar! Give me and then I will tell you!"

My grievance, how could I have this kind of younger sister who weight money more than me who is her biological sister.

But, I am also not that good.

From my purse I took out five dollar paper money, putting in her palm... my heart shedding tears, countless said, "Now you can tell me!"

Yan Yan took the money while count, she said, "Brother in law said, he asked me after I arrived at home, asking you about your answer, is it YES or NO, if YES, he would give me five dollar!"

Immediately I felt three lines in my head, Kang Yu, you that really good bribing other.

But this was not the main problem, the real problem was Yan Yan.

I yelled at her, "So why are you asking five dollar from me!"

Yan Yan chuckling counting at the money, "That because, I never do deficit business, both of her hands opened, if it is NO, at least I still able to have five dollar!"

I made fist from my hand, this little rotten brat!

"Sis, what are your answer, YES or NO?" Yan Yan sat on the edge of bed, fervent looked at me.

Very obvious, her enthusiastic was because she expecting that five dollar from Kang Yu!

"I don't know!" I felt embarrassed, using the quilt to cover myself.

I really didn't know whether I like or dislike him, I have known him for four months, other that his name is Kang Yu Ai Xin Jue Luo, nickname Wang Ye, he older two years than me, he likes to bully me, and other about him, I really not know anything. If that is *like*, what the reason for me to like him.

But in other perspective, I was able to misunderstanding his relationship with Yan Yan, the bitterness in my heart.

This year I am 14 years old, still so young, what is love, I really don't know, not understand.

If I said that I dislike him, but at same time I don't hate him, if I like him....

My face turned red, lower my head, suddenly I realized that recently I have thought a lot about him.

"How can you don't know, just now you were making an unreasonable scene as if crazy bitch (crazy dog), this is called don't know!"

If heard how Yan Yan elaborating, there really a time...hard for people to put up with.

"Hehe, when I was on the way home, I met Liu Li Jun, she said to me, in afternoon you were cried! It was because I had privately talking with brother in law." Yan Yan eyes sight looked as if she able to see through everything.

"Nonsense!" I turned my head, nervously covered myself, "My myocarditis (inflammation of heart muscle) relapse!"

"myocarditis (inflammation of heart muscle) relapse, how could you still able to run alike crazy dog, you are too awesome!" Yan Yan mocked.

10.2

Chapter 10

Part 2 (Two)

The Official Relationship

I burned and panic, “Can you stop to mention crazy dog and crazy bitch, even I really were bitch, I should find something alike Tibetan Mastiff as soul mate.”

Yan Yan thumbed up her finger, “That apparently, I can see that Kang Yu is something as good as Tibetan Mastiff, both of you are well-match couple.”

Suddenly I felt my stomachache, this little brat really good-talker, I really not match for her.

I sincerely talked from deep inside my heart, “I am not hate him, but if that is called like, I really don’t know.”

Yan Yan showed naïve expression, “Why don’t you give a try?”

I dumbfounded, “Give a try?”

Yan Yan lower her head and explained, “Just let me to take that five dollar...”

I really angry, make a fist from my hand and hit her head, “You rotten brat, just because you want to have the five dollar, you listen to me, don’t ask money from Kang Yu anymore.”

She rubbed her head and said, “See, still said you don’t know, at one glance oneself can say, very obvious, clearly, inside your heart his position is higher than me who is your biological sister, you haven’t married to him but you have started to save his money already.”

I exploded, I jumped out, “You still dare to speak nonsense, see how I strangle you to death.”

Yan Yan also jumped out from my room, “Killer, because of man murder her own sister.”

“Ou Yang Yan Yan, if you have gut don’t run!” I chase her along the corridor.

Thump, thump, the footstep, the noise disturbed mom who is in down stair, at the moment she showed up with her kitchen knife, she looked so valiant and

roared, “Back from school not doing the homework, are both of you trying to rebel?”

Mom is forensic investigator, no matter what types of knife she holding, it is extremely scary, it shocked both Yan Yan and I, stopped our footsteps, and then both of us just back to ours room, starting to do our homework.

When night comes, I could not sleep, I rolled in my bed, I bitterly trying to think, how should I face Kang Yu tomorrow.

All my head is filled with YES or NO, they are looked alike the bubble in the soda drink, waiting to blast.

I could not sleep for the entire night, looking at my panda eyes before go to school, along the way to school, Yan Yan is trying to persuade me, letting her to earn five dollar, I really pissed off, I chase to strangle her death along the way to school.

She is doing good, she isn't in the same class with Kang Yu, does not need to face him, but different with me, we are not only same class but also table-mate, I am lowering my head since I entering the school gate until the corridor to my class, I haven't prepared my heart, there is time I really think, why don't I passed out suddenly.

When entering the class, I still lower my head, sitting at one's side, at the first glance I spotted Kang Yu, his slender long legs.

Strangely my face burn red...

“Morning!” the cheering and happy voice, it flows from his mouth to my ears.

I stammered, “Mor....Morning...”

I nervous, sit down, subconscious I sitting at the edge of the chair, today I have prepared to make distance with him.

Kang Yu—the next matter is the focus, does not giving me time to think, “Yesterday...”

Once I heard that two words (昨 zuo 天 tian = yesterday), my mood stirring up, hurry taking out my homework from my bag, flee to Xiao Fan's seat, dragging Xiao Fan and said, “Xiao Fan, yesterday homework, there's I wanted to ask you!”

Xiao Fan is eating meat bun, quite surprised with me, almost choked by my coming, hurried hit her chest, while me as if finding a place to hide, I started to pour hot tea and patting her back.

I am sitting at Xiao Fan's place, even beaten to death I don't want to move, I let that Huang Yan Gan to stand up all morning before class.

Waiting until all people are gone for morning exercise, slowly I feel little bit relaxed, but the morning ceremony plus morning exercise only last for 20 minutes. Swishing—it has passed, and then we should back to class for study.

I looked at the wall corridor, suddenly the idea bumping my head to the wall pop out from my mind, if I could faint, the experience might not the good one.

After arrived at the class, I sit down, Kang Yu also sits down.

Silent.

Just at moment, Kang Yu opened his mouth, "Yesterday..."

I see the class representative is standing up, heading to leave the class, I remember, today first subject is the literature week test, reckoning to help the teacher for taking the test paper, at one movement, I have been running leaving the class, only to make one step ahead, I just dodge aside the class representative, Zhuang Fei.

I hurried to call the person who walking in corridor, "Teacher Sun, I come to help you bringing the things!"

Actually this is not the thing that I should do but I just directly grab it!

The thing that I should do, I have done, the thing that I should not do, I also have done.

During the test, student are not allow to speak, this rule everyone knows it, finally I feel undisturbed, but until the quiet passed, suddenly I remember, yesterday I didn't study!

Everything is classical Chinese idiom to interpret.

Too grievance!

I slowly dillydally the test paper with my ballpoint, other students have done

but I still dillydally, prepared to finish it until the end and the new class start.

The bell is ringing, immediately I stand up, running to in front and hand over my test paper, and then I directly running out from the class, able to hide one minute then just hide one minute... this rest-break in the first class is the longest break, fifteen minutes.

After run, suddenly I realized there is foot step at my back that coming near, when I turned back, the person is Kang Yu, his pitch black eyes are looking at me, it shocked me until my face turned pale, run faster.

Lacking from sleeping the result, I cannot run faster, just in moment caught by Kang Yu, Kang Yu dragging me to quiet place.

I am of course panic, crazily hugging the tree when I spotted it.

He even fiercer, he suddenly hugged me.

Hug...after all he really hugged me.

Panicking, I looked my surrounded, hoping no one sees us, finally I realized there is no way for me, after all we have run to the abandon small field, during this time, the possibility of others for coming is small, after thought for while, hand—loosen, I really being hugged by him.

I am complaining while thinking, I should wait during the lunch time before running in here so that he could not move and hug me.

After arrived at somewhere in the small field, Kang Yu finally released me, hurried I want to flee away but the place that he choose really disadvantageous, my body is surrounded by walls every corner, while he is in my front, the best I could do is step back, step by step until my back touch the cold wall then I stopped move.

I feel as if I were little white rabbit that shocked, while he is there grey wolf that closer step by step, Pa (slam, hitting) sound, both of his hands pressed on the wall, besiege me, I don't have way to escape.

"You...you... what do you..want to do!" my lips trembling.

His darken face so close to my face and shouted, "I still want to know, what are you trying to do!"

I looked left and right, looking at the surrounded, just not wanted to look at him, I just randomly answered him, "Just, I just going out to have strolled."

He bites his lips, his face even closer, forcing me to face him.

"You don't come too close to me, if there is words, let we have good talk." I tried to move one step behind, I really want to embedded myself to wall.

10.3

Chapter 10

Part 3 (Three)

The Official Relationship

“Yesterday...” he lift his head up said, I wanted to close my ears, but it seems he has predicted it, he pinched my shoulder, do not let me to make any move, “I want the answer for yesterday!”

My face turned red and burn, and also tried to avoid him, I must admit that myself isn’t good, facing to this big things such as feeling, that’s why I like to pretending.

“what...what... answer...I don’t...I don’t know!”

But he never spoke in circle way, he directly go to the main point, “Like me or dislike me!”

He really wanted to scream, but why he acted so directly, he not even give me time to think or blink my eyes.

“I just asked one time, speak!” he fiercely, shaking my body.

Actually I have thought it, he is older than me, why he is so intense, wooing (pursuing) girl similar to the adult, really wanted to know how this brat growing up.

I still stubbornly said that three words, “I don’t know!”

“Don’t know!” he angry, his face dark similar to the black pot.

“I really don’t know, why you so fierce to me!” I shouted at him.

Normally I never yelled or shouted at others, after I met and knew him, this habit develop bit by bit whenever I felt force or no way.

“Ou Yang Miao Miao, you are idiot to the bottomless!” He gritted.

I hate people called me idiot, “I am not idiot, I just... I just really don’t know.”

Likes what is it, I really don’t know, it useless to force me.

His black eyes fiercely looking at me as if there are thousand knife pierce into

me, “really one good of don’t know, you are perfunctory me.”

“Cih, I want to perfunctory you, I just heard from Yan Yan, just... just...” lied to you, this words, I really cannot say it.

Again when confessing, before he asked whether the person is like or dislike, why does he say first, is he like me or not.

I never heard him said... so what this mean? Everything is heard from others said.

“Anyway, I really don’t know!” I acted in a fit of pique.

Kang Yu sees that I am angry, he silent for moment, suddenly, he let me go, he turned, angrily walked away.

Hah?

This I really never thought it.

He does not turned back, suddenly his act made me feel bitter.

This big rotten bastard, he just left me alone, this way!

I frustrated hitting the wall.

After the bell ringing, I have no time to think about him, whether he angry or not, faster I run to my class.

Kang Yu has sat on his place, from the start till the end he does not see me, my heart feel more hurt and bitter.

What is this? What I am feeling?

Not only not see me, after that he not even speak one word to me, as if I weren’t there.

In the afternoon we have sport class, our class and the 4th class are joining, I have secretly took a look at Kang Yu, suddenly I realized he is talking with one of the 4th class girl in corner.

That smiling face as if pierce deep into me which make me have thought to kill someone.

Xiao Fan walked at my back, “Miao Miao, husband-wife quarrel?”

Coldly I glared her, “Who...who is with him husband and wife.”

She perhaps being intoxicated because of the drama, suddenly said, “I see that Wang Ye (prince) is thinking to have Ce Fu Jin (mistress).”

Mis...mistress!

This is more shocking compare to Yan Yan who called him brother in law.

“That 4th class girl, who is she?” Xiao Fan seems not see the changes in my face, she directly spoke to Huang Yan Gan who standing beside her.

“She is Gao Ting Ting, seems that she likes Wang Ye.”

Do both of these two are really want to provoke me.

“Both of you scram!” I really pissed off, separating both of them (Xiao Fan and Huang Yan Gan).

When I really angry, my tempramental really similar to my mom, once I get angry, I would turn alike murder weapon, for example...my eyes will be as sharp as knife!

I really want to chop both of that pair of dog and bitch (a cheating couple)!

But school does not have any of this kind of killing weapon, I have looked for entire class but I don't find that thing.

After I get back to class, I see that Gao Ting Ting as if flirting, I get angry, I rushed toward her.

Even though my character and Yan Yan are very different, but when we are angry, we are very similar, one of the hand slap to the wall, my anger face, adding to the advantageous height, no matter what...this 158cm little girl is still “manageable” for me.

I am type of the person who is hot-headed, also like to make irresponsible words, once I said, “Don't touch MY man! Have you listened, if you dare, I crippled you!” Along that I made fist with my hand.

Gao Ting Ting suddenly crying.

Cried and scared, aiya...just because of this cried?

Cih, this is so obvious we are not at same level, moreover now, I would not let

her off easily.

Fiercely I glared at her, she even cried such extreme, she sees how fierce I am, immediately she run into teacher room and make report to teacher.

I... very fast called into teacher room, plead guilty by threatening her.

I guess that she not dare to make report about the intimidating by saying “a pair of dog”, so just report about threatening, I lower my head and listen to all the “instruction” from teacher.

One class section, my ears seems to have callus.

After I done, the school is already dismissed.

I really angry, running into my class, I thought to collect debt with Kang Yu, but he has gone. There is only Xu Ying who is looking at me, immediately she talked to me, “Miao Miao, what happen with you, why were you asked to teacher’s room.”

I shook my head, “Nothing, where is Kang Yu?”

10.4

Chapter 10

Part 4 (Four)

The Official Relationship

“Today is the time to have new blackboard, chalks and pictures but all of the stuffs haven’t come, teacher asked Kang Yu to purchase all the school stationery to the nearby store .

“Oh!” I understood, today is the day of changing new blackboard.

“where is Xiao Fan? Li Liu Jun?” both of them are the people that responsible for the new blackboard.

“They said they hungry so they went to buy food, waiting for Kang Yu to come back and then they would do it together.” Xu Ying cleaned the blackboard.

Some of us, included Xiao Shuang and Da Shuang, every time we change the new blackboard we will stay, buy some food or drink, chit chat and helping Xiao Fan and Li Liu Jun to draw the map or doing the coloring.

Now Kang Yu also apart of student council committee, naturally he also stays.

Go to the stationery shop...

Pair of my eyes are fiercely glaring, turn my back and running out.

In this moment, I really don’t know what is called as “Shameless” this words, I just wanted to find him and collect the debt.

Rotten bastard!

One side he seems to wooing me, but another side he is flirting with another girl, you are skirt-chaser (womanizer).

I extremely angry, rushing to the street, still has not reached the stationery shop, I have spotted Kang Yu’s hands are holding with many things.

He sees me, but again acting as if he does not see me, I extremely angry—exploded, but I could not scold or cursed him, waiting until he passed me, I am foolishly followed at his back.

Perhaps the stuffs are heavy so that he walking so slowly, naturally I also walk slowly.

Sunsets, I feel that his back really beautiful, the light orange color of the ray illuminating dye out his body, brilliant light and vibrant colors. When passing the street, he stopped for while, looking at the cars, originally he has outstanding features alike painting that colored with gold, he looked alike knight in comics, he looked very handsome.

Looking at him, suddenly my face turned red, my heart is thumping faster.

Suddenly, he turned his back looked at me.

That pair of his shinning eyes as if dyed black-color mixed with the golden color diamond, there flames that penetrated, it makes my heart thumping even faster.

“Don’t touch MY man, wasn’t it?”

Brushed, my face is red until my ears.

How could he know it!

“You have guts to say it, but you don’t have gut to admit it!”

I feel as if my head began to smoke, and my fingers inconstantly moving.

“Didn’t you ever think about, what was this mean?”

What did it mean?

I dumbfounded, my head burning hot, my emotion suddenly stirring up, but when I start to have deep thought about what this mean.

Why every time I see Gao Ting Ting together with him, suddenly become angry, really really super angry, and also I even dare to do such scary act such as threatening others, still...before, when Yan Yan and he were talking...

Abruptly, jealous this words pop out from my head, pushing down all the moods.

Jealous!

I am jealous!!!

I.... jealous with Gao Ting Ting, also jealous with Yan Yan.

After all I really am jealous.

So that yesterday I did such thing like pushing down Yan Yan, today threatening Gao Ting Ting.

I am... why am I jealous...I...

I lift my head up looking at Kang Yu, just does not know since when he has been so close in front of me.

His voice is nice alike the velvet—wrapping all my moods, it also alike coaxing myself.

“Do you like me?”

An instantly being asked, I have already had the answer.

Like.

I... like him.

Suddenly my heart filled with burning hot, sour, inside the eyes flashed to understand the implicit meaning.

Kang Yu understood, he exposed thousand more beautiful smile compare to the sunsets, “It seems that you have understood!”

My face turned red and nodding, still nodding, unstopped nodding.

He stood beside me, suddenly said, “This little bit heavy...”

Heavy?

I see both of his hand holding heavy things.

“I... let me help you!”

I glanced at him, he rolled his eyes, “So heavy.”

“Understand! Give me one!” how can there be so many nonsense.

I thought he would share half the burden for me, but who's know that he changes the burden from one hand to another hands, while the empty hand is holding my hand.

I dumbfounded.

"Give you, take it!" he swinging the empty hand to me.

I looked at that big hand, slender long fingers, as if the jade, my face has turned to be so red, does not know whether the effect of the sunset or the burning hot in my face which able to fry poached egg.

Slowly I stretched out my hand, holding his hand.

Lower my head, I could feel the warm hands of him that tightly holding mine.

"Listen, you are allowing to like me. But, must like me until we white-haired (Love me forever until death do separate us), you don't have any option!"

I lift my head up, he is looking at me, his eyes are looked so serious, as if the seriousness about this is the only things that he wanted in his life.

I feel little bit shy, hm make a sound, answered him.

Nervous...

"Let's go!"

"En..."

Today, officially we are boy and girl friend, we are dating officially!

Chapter 11 (11.1)



Chapter 11

The Bed Problem

I was in love, it was puppy's love (early dating).

That was the fact.

I was Junior High School first year (7 grade), in the future later I still needed to go to Senior High examination.

That was also the reality.

Actually, I was trying and work hard to balance between my study and my love life.

During dating time still went for dating, but my study also could not to be

abandoned, or else it would arise bigger problem.

Even it still an inexperienced dating, but during our time, if love-relationship did not want to be found out, the best thing was showing the improvement in study, shouldn't get influenced and declined even only few % of zero. This was also one of China weakness in education system, because the grade of study was good—and then everything was good too.

Even we said it were dating and love relationship, the most intimate things between Kang Yu and I were only holding hands, during that time, Something like K F (not really sure what abbreviation this mean), this kind of relationship had not had association with the gut or wealth, but during that time we really never had thought about it before, not to mention K F, even kissing was not something we really understood.

During that time, holding hands were something awesome, it even considered as dangerous act.

For example during the class, using the reason as table-mate, we put our hand under the desk, hook our hands, pulled-pushed our hands, this was enough to feed our craving, or perhaps during the way home after school, we went home together, even we were going home together still we walking in separating path on the way home, we were looking for somewhere to meet secretly, seeing if there was people or not, holding hands, slowly walking together, if there really someone coming, we were immediately taken aback alike little white rabbit—explode by bomb, in fact we never thought and understood this was childish gestures. Waiting until the people gone, then we were holding hand again along the way home, toward the physical resistance and the alertness of mental were really—one biggest test, if there was wind blowing, we were preparing ourselves to separate.

This was really the sweetness and bitterness of human life.

After experience this kind of love, finally I have known many things about Kang Yu which I never knew before.

Kang Yu father had passed away when he was three years old, just like Kang Yu told me, his family surname is Ai Xin Jue Luo, because of this surname his father was labeled as criminal, during that time his family was labeled as Five black

categories^{1]}, his grandpa and father were captured as labor camp, his grandpa died during worked as labor camp worker, while his father was escaped from there and got sick, after he escaped from there he could not get job, so he took a job as repairing bicycle, after he reached 35 years old he finally married his 12 years old younger wife, that was his mother. Kang Yu and his mother were farmer, both of them are typical hard working citizen. During the “Literature era”, peasant and farmer were included as bottom red of five black categories, which also mean, his mother married to his father whom were the member of imperial-royal family which also someone in high social class, but during that time his grandpa from mother side was disagreed, his grandpa almost broke his mother leg, but his mother was not thinking much and even eloped with his father, that made his grandpa did not want to admit his mother as daughter anymore (disown), When Kang Yu father was 40 years old, Kang Yu born, but because his weak body, not long after that his father fell sick, he is growing up and taking care by his mother.

Actually this was also part of history, but I did really not that understand, every time he talked about his mother, Kang Yu seems as if talking about God.

I had heard many things about Dong Bei's (Eastern) people who are sided more to son, just like others mother, expecting own son turned be “Dragon” (successful), Kang Yu's mother heard that Shanghai has best education, providing many opportunities, because he is the only son in the family, she searched many connections and also spent much money to make Kang Yu came to Shanghai to study, while she lived in Dong Bei.

In Shanghai Kang Yu has an uncle who is businessman, when first time he came to Shanghai, he hasn't found any school which he able to transferred, so that he stayed at his uncle's home, but this uncle was not what good person, he took the money, he took the gift, but never once he considered about his relationship with his nephew, as he lived away from his home, just as I saw, Kang Yu are more alike slave for his uncle.

His uncle has grocery store, after the end of school day or when Kang Yu has school holiday, he would go to help, because he stayed and ate there, he was not paid for his work.

But Kang Yu extremely smart, when he taking care the stock, he would make good relationship with the suppliers, so that he would earn some extra money, that one supplier was an old man, he really likes Kang Yu, every time when the stock delivered he would give something to Kang Yu, as the time flies, Kang Yu still felt as slave, still much dependable if he working with the old man.

So that, after Kang Yu discussed with his mother, to give up the bad ones and turned to the better ones, he turned.

This is how the kid from poor family background have to manage the household, the kid without father in their early-hood, they become the family backbone to success.

No wonder this little brat is so mature.

That old man, later then I knew his surname is Shen, Kang Yu called him Uncle Shen, alike those Shanghainese said, Uncle Shen is old folk, he is so fashionable, he has high education, he even counted as Shanghai rich man, Uncle Shen even studied in US as exchange student before, very experienced and knowledgeable, have so many friends, as for why he still alone until this old, that because he is too playboy, he likes to change women until later he became “Cauliflower”, so that he spends his life alone, someone that ever spent life in overseas indeed different, very open minded, how Kang Yu could wooing girl, or have better understanding between girl and boy, all because Uncle Shen taught him, he completely never thought or considered Kang Yu age, he even not afraid to “mess” the young generation.

Aiya, I had taken the bait already, this was not important anymore.

unknown best, Uncle Shen really good toward Kang Yu, he gave him place to stay and also food, every month he would give Kang Yu 100 dollar as pocket money, now he is not that pathetic anymore. For us who born in 80's, Junior High school student, that amount of money was more than enough.

Because Uncle Shen is someone who really open minded, in front of him, both Kang Yu and I were never hide anything from the start till the end. That old man very happy, first day of second year holiday, it was my first day coming to his house with Kang Yu, Uncle Shen excited said, “Xiao Yu (Little Yu), you made progressed, you even bring “*daughter in law*²¹” her?”

I am red from head to toe, almost faint.

Kang Yu replied, "Hm, my little maiden, she has thin face, don't tease her, if she run, you and I will be dread!"

After Uncle Shen heard it, he laughed alike Maitreya^{3]}, "alright, alright, go upstairs to play, today you don't need to come to store, I will go by myself, have fun, I won't disturb you guys, ahahahaha..."

I hide at Kang Yu behind, very shy so not dare to speak, pulled his shirt.

He understood, pulled my hand and bring me upstairs.

Note:

1] 黑Hei 五 Wu 类 Lei : Five Black Categories which are: Landlords (Noble), rich peasants, counter-revolutionaries, bad element and rightists.

2] 媳 Xi 妇 Fu 儿 er: Literally means daughter in law but most of the Shanghaiese who acknowledge a girl who dating one of their family member usually call the with Xi fu er. 媳妇儿 can be mean young woman or young married woman, maiden.

3] 弥Mi 勒 le佛 Fo: Bodhisattva Maitreya.

11.2



Chapter 11

Part 2 (Two)

Bed Problem

Uncle Shen house was typical storey-Shanghainese houses, it was 7-2 house that kind of types, but the old man's house environment was good. Two houses were his, Kang Yu was staying at the second floor room with 15 meter square room, even it small but complete in detail, he likes clean and tidy it neatly, I see that his room better much than mine.

I spotted inside his room there a small study-desk, it filled with many prototype of airplane, and also whatsoever stuff that look something like "heaven book" for me, I have read but not understood.

I asked, "Kang Yu, do you like airplane?"

He opened the soda bottle, "Yes."

I took the cola from him, using the straw pipe to drink, realized it was not cold, I frowned.

Cola best drink when it cold.

Kang Yu came closer, he saw that I just took one sip of the cola and then said, "Don't drink the cold, later your stomach will ache, Uncle Shen said when girl is having their "small diary" (menstruation period) cannot drink cold."

My face was as red as blood already, this...little brat, how could he say so directly, and also Uncle Shen, there's no one would teach something like this.

I started to understand him better, he even know when my menstruation period come?

"You... how do you know?" I stammered.

"Your younger sister said it, I gave her two bags of dried plum, she told me everything, she even told me about your sleeping posture." He peeled apple.

I extremely angry, made fist with my hand, inside my heart I cursed her, Ou Yang Yan Yan, you hungry ghost!

“Miao Miao, eat the apple!” he has done peeling and cut the apple into small pieces, put in plate and gave it to me.

I made “en” sound, I put down my school bag, I told myself over and over, others I didn’t need to think too much, I came here only to finish my holiday homework.

I took out my homework, English was my weakness, but Kang Yu English was best, I thought he must study with Uncle Shen since that old man ever studied in US.

Both of us were sitting quite close, but we were never wanted to think something negative, so that all of our focus was in doing our homework.

Earlier dating, our study must be good, this was our agreement.

Under Kang Yu instruction and guidance, my English homework done smoothly, after finished, it has been afternoon two o’clock, I felt little bit sleepy.

Kang Yu let me to have slept in his bed, while he went out to buy vegetable.

His bed ah, suddenly I felt little bit menacing ...

But, still my face flushed when I lying in his bed.

If wanted to blame, it really my fault because of my habit reading those Japanese Manga too much, got little bit influence, my heart has felt “little demon” inside.

Sleep, I hurried close my eyes.

Kang Yu has been back from buying vegetable.

I—just in moment has felt asleep, waiting, when I woke up, outside the window sun has set, seeing at the clock in the edge of bed head, time has showed six o’clock, I really slept soundly.

I stretched out my hands, by my surprised, Kang Yu was sitting down on the chair beside the bed, looking at me.

It surprised me so much and I not dare to make move, I froze and maintain my position.

Suddenly I remembered, whether I drooling or not.

It seems that I not!

I didn't dare to touch, if I really drool, it must be so awkward.

Kang Yu kept on looking at me, he touched his chin, as if he was in deep thought.

I felt alike chicken that prepared to slaughter. Would he mind and think that my sleeping posture such ugly, well I must say that indeed I sleep terrible ugly, most of time I sleep alike “大” da character. Occupy all the bed.

Take my life, how could I never paid attention with this?

Suddenly he laughing happily, “This big of bed you able to sleep like this, later how bigger bed I should buy so that I have space to sleep!”

I could feel my face skin hot, suddenly I didn't think to make any mischief because this little brat was more sinister than me.

How could that fast, he has thought about the size of bed, small or big.

This bed problem...

This problem really too much.

“Why is your face red? This is one of the important matter, this has huge influence for our future...”

Smacking sound.... I took the pillow and threw it toward his face, I really didn't want to hear more nauseating word from him.

Stood up, hurried I stood up from his bed, made distance from the bed.

I almost jumped down from the bed and then jumping further way by three meters from bed.

I didn't have thing to say but looking for topic: “I... I... hungry!”

Kang Yu also not continued that topic anymore, “Red braised pork still need little bit time to cooked, wait for moment.”

“Where is Uncle Shen?”

Kang Yu put the pillow well, “He is dancing in ballroom, every night he likes to dance with the old ladies, not need to worry him.”

Shortly to say, it only both of us were having dinner together.

I got nervous again!

Sitting in front of study desk, I didn't know what to do, so that better for me to tidy up the desk and kept my books.

Kang Yu asked me, "Miao Miao, which high school are you taking?"

The next semester would be our third year in Junior high, the most important during the last year in junior high is senior high entrance examination, this time there is one good sentence about doing good exam for better high school, so that can enter best university too.

Changing the topic, it ease the tension in my heart much better, I thought, "My mom said that Yan Yan and I are going to take Shi San Nv Senior High School (The girl's high school)."

Shi San Nv Senior High is one of best school in Shanghai, the examination is so difficult.

Kang Yu looked gloomy, "Girl's high school?"

I nodded, but not understand why he looked so gloomy.

Kang Yu bitterly said, "Girl's high school, I don't have chance to take the examination?"

Uh...I understood now.

He wanted to have same school with me,

Kang Yu wanted to study and spend all the time during senior high, when I thought about it, I felt so sweet, but my mom ordered, I not dare to offend or not to listen.

Hurried I said to him, "It was my mom asked for, still it does not mean that I able to pass the examination."

But to be honest, alike the smart Xu Ying, taking the examination was quite difficult as for me, perhaps quite dangerous.

I asked, "how about you?"

Kang Yu sat on the edge of the bed, said "Zhi Sheng (Helicopter), as for me

who is not local student, Zhi Sheng is much convenient, moreover the school fee is cheaper and also I can obtain the scholarship.”

I nodded my head agreed, he said very true, for the non-local student who study in Shanghai the grade must be higher, but it might be better to Zhi Sheng high school, again... in order to be qualified for the examination entrance, for whole semester during Junior high school be at top five rank.

I felt little bit panic, suddenly I thought about Zhi Sheng, but for my result...

Headache.

This is what called as if you are lazy during your prime, you will be sorry in your old age, grievance!

I have drawn in deep thought!

It seems Kang Yu able to see me through, “Don’t worry, there still one semester, there’s still time!”

I nodded, use all my strength nodding.

I must be study hard.

Kang Yu pondering, “Not bad to take girl’s high school.”

Is it good?

“Girl’s high school does not have boys, I feel much relieved.” He said, “If go to Zhi Sheng, there is possibility we won’t be at same class, whatever girl’s high school is still better.”

After he said, this idea sound very good, hurried he took out the mathematic and literature books, “Miao Miao, starting from today, you must study hard!”

Uh...

Kang Yu must be because there no boys in girl’s school and then you were forcing me to enter there.

What kind of person you are.

But, he seems to be finalized with his decision, to insist me getting into girl’s high school, while me, under his encouragement, my study grades were starting progressed and advanced. But, I didn’t want to study in girl’s high school, I

prepared myself to get top five and then go for Zhi Sheng.

At the blink of eyes, the half year of the third year of junior high passed.

Unfortunately, the things turn out contrary to the way of my wishes.

Before the simulation examination come, I fell sick, it was severe serious, so that I missed...

Chapter 12 (12.1)

Chapter 12

Part 1 (One)

Evil Hormone

The second half semester is started, phone is popular in Shanghai, for the first installment the phone cost thousand dollar, but during that time it was huge amount of money, while the phone number still consist seven numbers, not only that, almost all the student in the class have made phone installment, once being installed, every student who went to school strangely starting to exchange phone number, after school ended, dial one by one the number, everyone is excited.

Uncle Shen who is rich man, naturally he has made an installment at his home, so that Kang Yu and I were able to have chit chat during the night, on the silent night, both of us were talking in the phone while covering self with quilt, if we weren't speaking until midnight, we would not hang up the phone, for the topic, it really not important, more or less, I responsible to talk while Kang Yu just to listen.

When the bill came, my mom almost faint, I just told her that I spoke with my classmate for study purpose, anyway, I have lot progressed and my result were better recently, so that my mom believed me, by this way the matter just passed, I also not that stupid and made same mistake twice, it only when weekend came, then I would be more greedy to make the call for myself, anyway, from Monday to Friday, we still able to meet at school.

The time passed so quickly, at the blink it has already April, unknown whether because the changes of the season or what but most time I felt pain in my chest and suffocating, but it last for short, I thought it might because the changes of the season so my body not able to adapt faster, so that, I didn't think too much about it, I also don't have appetite, every time I only ate for two spoon and felt full, I became thinner until my weight reached 80 pounds, there was one time in afternoon when Kang Yu saw me not eating, his face was terrible dull as if he had stepped on dog poop.

There was nothing I could do, I just really could not eat.

On Saturday after the lunch time, I was lying to my mom, saying that I was going to Xu Ying's home to study, actually I was going to Kang Yu's home, in order to conceal, I brought Yan Yan out together, she really someone took good advantage, asking five dollar from me and then she went around by herself.

My English was terrible sucks, but this subject has weighted 150 point, I could not afford to miss it, I really serious begging Kang Yu to teach me, moreover he was happier than me because we were together.

During the dinner time, Uncle Shen was going to ballroom, so he left me together with Kang Yu at home to have dinner. I have got accustomed not as nervous as before, very obedient to arrange the tableware (plate, bowl, chopsticks), Kang Yu is very good in cooking, he could cook various dishes, smell and taste very good, he is better than me, but still I didn't have any appetite, after have some, I could not eat anymore, I wiped my mouth, sitting at Kang Yu's bed, from my bag I took out my manga, an adjustment—taking break from my exhausted homework and study.

I just spotted to see the kiss scene, my heart was beating faster, secretly I took a look to Kang Yu, he was also looked at me, somehow, I could sense that his eyes sight was filled with something.

suddenly Kang Yu came closer to me, pinched my shoulder and pressed me down at the bed.

I stare blanked for moment.

Would it be...would it be...

My face red...

Kang Yu with serious expression said, "Miao Miao..."

Shyly, I responded, " What..What?" I embarrassed to have expected, but also little bit denial, inside my head as if there were an angel and devil fighting.

But very fast, the Kiss scene in my mind gone, I didn't want to think anything, naturally I closed my eyes, we have dating for a year, the couple (boy and girl) in manga, most of them were ever having kissed before, it only a kiss, what was so

great about it, I would be fifteen, most of the manga leads were at this kind of age, I should admit that I was influence by the Japanese manga it really dangerous and poisonous, just I could not guess whether he able or not, as for me, I cannot.

His beautiful slender fingers touched my lips, my heart crazily thumping.

I have waited for Kang Yu to kiss me, unknown Kang Yu just didn't have same thought as me, after all he was pinching to open my mouth, force to put food into my mouth, I almost choke death by him.

"Eat!"

"I don't want to eat anymore, don't force me!" my mouth was full with rice and meat broth taste.

But Kang Yu was stronger than me, added with his devil attitude; I not dare not to eat.

After I finished half of bowl, Kang Yu finally let me off.

While my dream about kissing has gone and replace with meat broth taste, huhuhuhu...

I stubborn did not want to talk with him for week.

But days still passed...

18 April was Kang Yu 17th birthday, I used my red pocket money to buy him birthday present, I rushed to the sport store, I bought him a pair of basketball shoes, during that time NIKE was famous, ADIDAS was so luxurious, according to my financial, able to buy one branded product was more than great, unknown, suddenly Kang Yu played basket ball during the last half year in junior high, I resented.

He was good in comforting me, he knew that I bought him a pair of sport shoes, he said to me, "Any shoes that you bought just same, as long as I can wear, then all just good."

After I heard, my heart filled with deathly sweetness, so why should I need to bother mistaken bought the stuff, I even forgot the matter he forced me to eat.

12.2



Chapter 12

Part 2 (Two)

All was because Saint Seiya^{1]}, as we know that there are 12 zodiacs, Kang Yu is belong to Aries zodiac, but later in N years later, I have known that the most black belly zodiac is Aries, of course I knew it recently after, also he is someone make me feel to be sinister.

On Thursday afternoon during the first subject, suddenly my heart ache (greatly in pain), my lips starting to change purple, immediately Kang Yu brought me to school health care, teacher said that I might lack of oxygen so asked me to go home to have rest.

Kang Yu run to the teacher room, asking our homeroom teacher to let him sent me home, since the homeroom teacher busy, he approved.

Kang Yu perhaps thought that I might faint if walking home so he suggested to take public transportation, when we were arrived at bus station, there were lot of people inside, also there was two unopened windows, furthermore the weather was terrible hot, so that inside the bus was so hot, so suffocating, after we arrived at another station, the people was not decreasing, when the bus door closed, to the unknown who was farting inside the bus and made the situation worse, at this moment, the person who fart would not admit, while people inside the bus only glared one to another, they were speculating who was farting, that bad smell fart must be someone who ate leek, the smell terrible scary, while I felt suffocated and my heart ache and I also felt want to vomiting.

The conductor asked: "Who hasn't bought the ticket?"

I saw Kang Yu, I wanted to tell him that we were stopped at next station, I afraid to vomit inside the bus, but I spotted there was devious expression on him, suddenly I heard him shouting: "The one who fart not buying the ticket!"

At that time, the citizen were so simple, if someone illegally rode the public transportation would definitely called as scum, after he said, one fat man hurried raise his hand and showed his ticket, louder said: "I have bought the ticket!"

After he said, everyone inside glared at him, as if daggers fly to him.

Later on that man realized he was tricked, scratching his head, his face red and moved to back, after arrived at the next stop, unknown whether it was his destination or just he felt embarrassed, he hurried get off.

At that moment I really wanted to vomit, but got choked back, my forehead sweating like crazy.

Kang Yu, sometime he really alike little devil.

There was once time during the weekend, Uncle Shen wanted to wholesale many frozen dumpling, during that time, it was something new, no one dares to buy because they were afraid it was not fresh, but Uncle Shen thought to cook by himself and tried it first before he decided to sell or not.

Hence, Kang Yu has stock many in Uncle Shen's store and later cooked it as tester.

While me, I was doing nothing, I stood beside to help, looking at Kang Yu who was passionately greeting the customers, dragging people to the store, while his mouth kept on shouting "give a try, just give a try! Guarantee this taste delicious, it is okay not buy."

That customer perhaps thought it was magnificent hospitality, ate one and then he realized that Kang Yu looked at him, I didn't understand what he saw, but the customer felt little bit embarrassed, after he ate, Kang Yu seriously asked: "Is it cooked? If it is cooked I will take it out."

That customer and me perhaps had three black lines in our eyes sight.

Suddenly I felt worried about my future.

I...definitely... not a match with him!

My heart shaken...

The last ten days of April, my health was starting to deteriorate and the sign was so obvious, I started to have arrhythmia²¹, I didn't know whether because I studied very late every nights, didn't have proper sleep so that caused it, I stubborn to endure the pain, because within two weeks there would be simulation test, I wanted to endure it, endured until the simulation test ended, if I passed, I could go to Zhi Sheng, without additional examination so that I would

have more time to rest.

During Monday, I didn't bring my meal, because on Sunday Kang Yu, called me that he would prepare my meal, whatever I could not eat much, while Yan Yan has great appetite, she able to eat three bowls at one time meal.

Note:

1] 圣Sheng斗 Dou士 Shi 星 Xing矢 shi : Saint Seiya, knight of zodiac is the manga series written and illustrated by Masami Kurumada (detailed check on Wikipedia)

2] 心 Xin 律 Lv : arrhythmia is the sickness of irregular heart beating, either the heart beat faster or too slowly.

12.3



Chapter 12

Part 3 (Three)

During the lunch time, Kang Yu brought the lunch box, “Miao Miao, taste it.”

When I opened the lunch box, I smelled very delicious fragrant, inside the lunch box the food was exactly similar with sold in the store, very thin like paper sheet. Dried meat ad dried pork intestines, the fragrant suddenly made me hungry, “What is this?” I curiously asked, “Fu Shun^{3]} special local product, it specially made by my mom, give a try.” He answered me while taught me how to eat it, “Pan Cakes and dried meat are my mom specialty, I guarantee you it taste best.”

Kang Yu rolled the shredded scallion pancakes, there also light dish, coated with sauce and later he gave me, immediately I took big bite, it taste very good, chewing, “Very delicious!” “See, it really taste good right, let eat more, eat all of it!”

I hurried nodding, I ate and chewed, I didn’t see Kang Yu eat it.

Waiting until I finished all the food, I looked Kang Yu tidied up the lunch box, took a long breath.

I paused for moment and asked, “Are you on purpose asking your mom to make it?” I asked.

After he tidied up the lunch box, he gently patted my head, “I afraid you get thinner, blow by the wind, when the time comes, I really don’t have way to chase after my maiden!”

I felt so touching, I almost cried, sob spasmodically, “You reassured, I will have proper meal, I will make myself grow fatter.”

Kang Yu smiled nodding his head, he gently patting my small head.

Now, other than entering Zhi Sheng, I still have another purpose, have proper meal and progressing!

During the dinner time at home, I forced myself to eat more, I just didn’t want to make Kang Yu worried, but to unknown me, my heart suddenly ache, my body

felt heavy, when midnight I have fever.

My mom took the temperature, suddenly shouting, she even forgot to wear her slipper and called my daddy.

I took a glance in the thermometer, very well, it was 39,8 degree.

My dad didn't care about his clothes, immediately he took me down stairs, Yan Yan was awakened, worried looking at me, she wanted to follow mom and dad to hospital but she didn't success, mom and dad reasoned tomorrow she still need go to school, so let her to stay and sleep at home.

When I arrived at hospital, my body temperature was higher, it up to 40 degree, my whole body was burning hot, while myself more and more lost control, when my eyes saw black, I had unconscious.

How could I know that my myocardium relapsed, it even relapsed worsen than before, other than high body temperature, my arrhythmia has already in third stage.

When the heart beat of normal person is Thump, Thump, while the third stage of arrhythmia is like thumpthumpthump, beating too fast, and the heart beat could stop at anytime, and then continued thumpthumpthump! And next it would stop for moment, and beat thumpthumpthump, again and again, that why I could feel so suffocating and most of time my heart beat is getting faster and faster.

The second day my fever has not reduced, it even reached until 41 degree, later my mom took care of me whole time, I was having fever for three days three nights, my hair almost burn to the grey color already, if not because my mom put the ice bag in my head, perhaps I might burn to be idiot already.

I was unconscious, unconscious, I felt unconscious and never woke up again, but during my unconscious state, I still able to sense people or something happen in my surrounded.

I heard Yan Yan crying voice and also her rumbling, her words almost made me pissed off to death, "Big sis, you don't die ah, even if you die, you should remember to tell me where you save your money, I know you save lot of money." She cried as if she lost her breath, and then she cried, "Let me tell you, if you die,

I won't miss you, those manga of yours will be mine, I also will slaughter Cai Xi, make dog steamboat, you listen!"

She really wanted me to die, or she just wanted to piss me off and made me awake, but I clearly know, since Yan Yan was small she dislike to cry, so if now she cried such extreme, this was the first time I remembered in my life she cried this way.

She directly said to me while crying, "If you really death, how about Kang Yu? Don't you feel let off so easily those girls, let me tell you, when Kang Yu knew your condition, he panic to the point he cried, it was my first time seeing boy crying, but, even he cried he still looked so handsome, big sister, if you are really want to die, it better you wake up first at least to make death will, let him to marry me, don't let one's own fertile water flow into others field (idiom)."

Aigooo, desperately serious, she even able to say about "don't let one's own fertile water flow into others field", really not easy for her.

I really wanted to wake up, but I just could not, I have tried my best to open my eyes, but I felt as if my eyes were pressed with heavy metal so that I could not open my eyes.

Soon, my mind becoming blurred, faintly I heard, my mom and dad were deciding to bring me to Beijing, they said there was a famous doctor who could cure my sickness.

During that time, I still thought to join the simulation examination, I still wanted to go but still not awake, everything turned white.

When wait until I awake that time, it has been passed one month, I had passed the right to join the examination, still I found out one most frightening thing.

I became fatty.

It was not an ordinary fat, but I became super fat, an extreme fat, the fat that made me look alike balloon, my face is super chubby and even squeezed and made my rounded eyes turned be slit eyes.

It better for me to go die, and go for reincarnation, but my mom and dad who are in front of me are looked so happy, it even erased my thought, "Miao Miao, you wake up it great!" my mom hugged me while crying.

Perhaps I have slept too long, so that I spoke quite detrimental, I trembling asked, "Mom...fat..."

What I meant was how I could get fat to this point.

My dad wiped dry his tear, said "Don't be afraid Miao Miao, it's okay, you just got some hormone shots, this kind of things would make you get little bit fatter, only little bit, really just little bit."

How could this just little bit, when I able to get down for walking, I was overweight, it was 168 pounds, it double my previous size, when I reflected myself in mirror, I didn't even recognized myself anymore.

Am I still human?

Am I really still human?

This is balloon.

To be honest I still care with my appearance, when I was slim, I still okay, but now when I fat like this... somewhat my appearance, seven □ materials, now I got nothing.

I cried to death, anger me to anorexia.

Thus, finally I met the person who made into this fat as balloon, he was not alike my dad and mom who were comforting me gently, he knew that I got fatter and refused to eat, he angry yelled at me, "still think to be beautiful even it cost to lost your life!"

Only by his single words, it directly hit me down to ground.

Well, if between life and beautiful there only one thing that I should choose, fine, I still choose for my life.

I afraid death...

But every time I thought about Kang Yu, I felt, it better go die.

The fatty balloon would never have love...

My resentment...my grievance!!!

Evil wicked hormone!!!

Chapter 13 (13.1)



Chapter 13

I still able to carry

Myocarditis is difficult to cure, it can only rely on the long term recuperation. My myocarditis is type of disease that carry on virus, so that must be careful as long as I have fever, the myocarditis will relapse.

In other way, as long as I don't get fever, not too exhausting, it won't relapse, there is no difference with the normal people, I still can run, jump, can eat and sleep but if it relapse, not taking good care it lead to heart failure, when the time comes, the curing is not as easy as shot few times hormone, but I must replace the heart with the new ones.

It quite scary, but actually not that scary, as long as I taking good care my body, everything will be alright, I am quite stabilized, but every times I reflect

myself in mirror, I feel little bit depressed.

168 pounds of weight was my first time got hormone shot in hospital, later I continue to “grow up”, during the time I came back using train to Shanghai, my weight has reached 180 pounds, because of the fever that burned my black hair into white, so just shave it into big bald head and slowly let it growing again.

At same time, when my little sister looked at me, she quite surprised and exclaimed, “Meat-ball!”

It meat ball, absolutely like meat ball, because of those hormones, I become fatter, there is little bit edema (condition with an excess watery fluid in the tissues of body), I looked alike the human dough filled with water. All is meat, I even thought that walking was not suitable for me anymore perhaps I rolling more suitable for me to move.

The nickname that Yan Yan gave me made my mood down, people said that the relationship between siblings are good, we have separate for more than a month, at least she must hug me when saw me, even I didn’t want to be hug by her, I wanted to kick her, but the problem I could not move to kick her because I have became this fat, every time I walked for few steps I felt difficulty in breathing, I even could not move sometimes.

That specialist said, the first week must be like this, because the heart must be adapting with the body weight, after some time it would be alright, waiting until the bloating subsided, I won’t look alike meat ball anymore, would look better, but I have deep thought how someone that has 80 pounds suddenly turned to be 180 pounds in blinked of eyes, no matter what, it still not good to see.

All my clothes are bought the new, the old one was not fit me anymore, there were black cloud in my back and I just went to upstairs, locked myself inside my bed room, I started to play “seclusion” game.

I don’t have any way, I was in my prime as young maiden, the time that I like to be beautiful utmost, but when I turned be like this, I really went crazy moreover I worried what my boyfriend, Kang Yu thought, I felt...bitterness.

The door suddenly opened, Yan Yan’s head pop out and looking at me, “Sis, I didn’t mean it.”

I felt frustrated in my bed, ignored her.

“Sis, it looks not bad, fat little bit, you take a look yourself, plump and white, really cute.”

Comfort words, this might the comforting words.

White and plump, it true, my face and skin are better compare when I was skinny, perhaps because of that hormone shot, too much got shot, this thick fat is because getting shot regularly, alike absorbing the essence of sun and moon, Reborn^{1]} but not as the most beautiful girl in the world, but as the most rounded human meat ball.

“Sis, don’t think too much, you have good rest, next half month will be our real entrance examination, you should focus on your entrance examination, you are good in study, mom and dad are having high expectation on you to make proud this family, so that when you lost something you must gain another, you have advantageous for the entrance examination so that you must be enrolled to Shi San Nv high school.”

I still said nothing, I feel whether this one month or one century, it just same for me, I soulless.

Yan Yan still talking by herself, “Your class have knew that you are back, tomorrow they will make welcoming meeting, ah, I have made phone call to Kang Yu, to let him know that you are back!”

When I heard Kang Yu, this name, my body moves as if my soul has back, I hurried pulled and yelled, stopping Yan Yan to make phone call, “Don’t go!”

Yan Yan surprised, “Why, he—for this month every day he really wanted to see you, when he has time he would call me asking about your condition, I have promised him, once you back, immediately to tell him.”

I wrapped myself with quilt, “I haven’t made heart-preparation.”

I was not same as before, as lithe as swallow^{2]} that Ou Yang Miao Miao, now I am human meat ball the alien, I am not same “kind” with him the ordinary human being, just as thought in biology: the love between cross-species would never have good ending, I really afraid to meet him, would he and Yan Yan same, at once glance would yell me human meat, when the time comes... I afraid I

could not bear it, would go crazy.

Yan Yan finally understood, she didn't call him, but she sat on my bed, "Sis, you don't think too much, Kang Yu isn't that kind of man, you know him, when he got the notice from Zhi Sheng, he didn't even smile, that notification letter just trash for him, he tossed it aside, if not because mom and dad were taking care you, he perhaps didn't have heart to study anymore, rushing to buy the train ticket to find you."

I knew that Kang Yu got first rank for the simulation examination for the entire school, just expected that they smoothly enter Zhi Sheng, except her, Fan Jun and Liu Li Jun also in top five in my school before. Initially this is one of happiest thing, as for me, I really could not feel happy for it. Actually this must be one of happy thing for him but as I seen, no matter how, he could not be happy."

Yan Yan continued: "Kang Yu knew that you are fine, he cried and smile, I could feel that he happier compare when he received the notification for Zhi Sheng, when he have time he would make phone call asking about your condition, as for him this month he must be forced himself until goes crazy, he similar to hen, every day he "chichicha" at my side, unknown people might think that he is courting on me."

I get touched when I heard it, my tears streaming down, but still this is two different things

Note:

1] 脱 Tuo 胎 Tai 换 Huan 骨 Gu : to shed one's mortal body and exchange one's bones (idiom), Reborn.

2] 身 Shen 轻 jing 如 Ru 燕 Yan : As lithe as a swallow (having good body shape alike athlete or beautiful girl), slim and tall.

13.2

Chapter 13

Part 2 (Two)

I still able to carry

within this one month he thought about that old Ou Yang Miao Miao, not this meatball.

If he meet the current me...I was not dare to think of it.

Perhaps ignore, nausea, or any others. I afraid when he sees there will be burdensome expression seeing me.

I really afraid, this kind of fear compare to death is more terrified.

Yan Yan saw me said nothing, she angrily unwrapped that quilt, "Sis, are you played autism? If you feel pity, it hasn't turned your round, okay? Because there are still many people in this world that does not have hand or leg, you are only fat, and also you still have healthy body, you don't need to behave this way."

"You know nothing!" I roared at her.

"What I didn't know, I could feel that you are not trust Kang Yu enough, you are not believed on his integrity." Yan Yan took the quilt, she looked so cold toward me.

The current me, I don't have any thought, I just feel that she is bullied me, seeing how beautiful and youth she is, and looking at myself, I feel resentment.

"I don't care, now I will going to call Kang Yu, I will tell him, you have come back already, and I also inform him that you want to dump him.'

I panic, not only quilt but also pulled Yan Yan's shirt, "Who said, I don't want to dump him."

Yan Yan answered, "it is so clear in your face, written I am not match up for him, I think to break with you, those words."

"I am not, I just..." speechless, there is time that Yan Yan able to see through me, so that I can't say anything.

"What not? I told you, if you really want to break, I am so happy about it, just

like what I told you during your unconscious, if you really don't want, just remembered to priority on me, because I just different with you, although I changed become fat pig, I will still stick on Kang Yu, this kind of man is resemble to the novel male lead, when you missed him, there won't second chance, you should treasure, die-hard, stick like glue! You don't want him there are many third year female students that queue for him.

Yan Yan dislikes manga, but she likes to read novel, she said that reading "words" better compare to read manga, she frees to imagine the female and male lead, it much better on that way!

Yan Yan continued, "you are not being grateful, sometime I thought you alike death cat run into blind mouse."

"That is blind cat that run into death mouse." I could not endure and correct her.

Yan Yan said, "I don't care whether blind cat or death cat, whatever it still cat, anyway, Kang Yu is that mouse, who is sending himself, there is no reason for you to refuse!"

My head ache, "I never said I don't want!"

"You said, both of my eyes are seeing you that you don't want."

Little bit hard to explain rationally, but when Yan Yan said it, I feel it match, my mood not that depressed and frustrated anymore, she still there nagging, said many random things but all what she said are right.

Because I kept silent for the whole time, she thought I might brain-dead, grabbed my collar and said, "If you really don't want, tonight I will "blacken" Kang Yu, let... him reborn X as "mature" mouse, let see what can you do later?"

Reborn to be mature mouse?

She must refer to the raw rice is cooked^{1]}.

X, this is really provoke the heart, I doubt whether she understand X or not?

During this generation the novel is still pure, there is no bed scene, even though there is, it will describe alike blowing the candle and other such things, very vague description, while the Japanese manga is different, the drawing is

vivid as evidence.

“Alright, I understand what you mean!” I stopped Yan Yan from her random opinions, if I not stopped her, perhaps she might nag until tomorrow sunrise.

Yan Yan not willing to stop, “Are sure understand?”

I nodded, to sum up added little bit, “understood, understood, I should not dump Kang Yu but if I really want to dump him, I must be prioritized you.”

Yan Yan nodding her head, “Not Bad!”

Being disturbed by her, me, who still have the sorrow of the autumn and wound in the spring, all were gone, moreover I able to have wide laughed.

I looked at Yan Yan, suddenly I felt it good to have little sister.

I hugged her, “Yan Yan, I miss you.”

Finally I realized more than a month I did not see her, I missed her, since we was kid we never separated for this long before.

Suddenly Yan Yan crying, she hugged me back, “I do miss you too, My elder sister, you just don’t know, I really afraid that you might die, after...” she sniffed her nose, “Later in the future where can I freely spend pocket money, and still I haven’t took Kang Yu’s money...”

Immediately I felt three black lines in my head....

She talked that much, after all, she just wanted Kang Yu and my money.

Such frightening, this little brat love money that much, really did not know what she would be in the future?

But, thanks to Yan Yan’s opinions, when the night came I didn’t thought so much, after all the result just same, why should I hide?

Just in this moment, I have thought one thing.

If in my entire life for the path of my feeling (love) must be get hurt, then I wish...the first person who hurt me must Kang Yu.

Early morning in the second day, I didn’t go to school with Yan Yan, I starting to lose my courage, but I still should face it, although not for Kang Yu, I must meet Xiao Fan, Da Shuang, Xiao Shuang, Xu Ying, Liu Li Jun, all of them. During

the time I sick, all of them were crying so “splendid”. Also I must be handing out the sick leave, I must should discuss with the teachers about my study courses, I did not want to start all over again the third year, re-take the examination.

I was conflicted for long time, it has been ten o'clock, I have got call from the vice class leader, asking me when I arrived at school, the classmate have been waiting in front of the school, welcomed me back to school. No way to escape, this time I piggy back my school bag, went out from my home's door, Yan Yan, her mouth, she absolutely talking many thing and also made lots of reports to school.

Note:

1] 生 Sheng 米 Mi 煮 Zhu 成 Cheng 熟 shu 饭 fan : the rice is cooked (idiom) what done is done.

Chapter 14 (14.1)

Chapter 14

Part 1 (One)

Senior High School started

Actually being fat is not big matter, it is something alike after the sweetness and excitement, finally realizing it purely self-comforting to heart.

Everyday seeing myself alike ball-meat, everyday still seeing myself reflecting in mirror, really wanting to break the mirror...

There are many obstacles and troubles being fatty, no need to say further, just the closest one, starting from the food....

About clothing, it riddled with gaping wounds.

I fat, naturally I need to buy new clothes, hence it rushing in leisure moment, from reviewed welcoming the entrance examination for high school —my time not much, I still need to go to department store with my little sister and mom, as saying the 30% is appearance and 70% is about dress, somewhat my appearance, I have changed, it won't be too over if I want to wear something beautiful, right.

Well...

No matter which dresses I like, the salesgirl always gives me the same answered—we are sorry, Miss we afraid there is no your size!

How could you guys know that there is no my size, I haven't tried it yet.

Shopping for one round, buy no clothes, I almost lost my confident.

Well, I don't... buy girls clothes!

Buy men dresses!

Itonly available sport wear.

Huhuhuhuhu

Not to mention food.

I have had became this fat, did I still dare to eat? Ice cream, tart, chocolate,

fried chicken, red braised pork, all are high carbohydrate food.

All tasty food already bid good bye to me.

I only ate boil chicken without skin!

Cannot complaint!

Continue....

Talking about house, my house not big but also not too small, moreover the piece of area where my house built big enough for my family and also me but the one I barely could not tolerate was the bathtub. I type of person who likes to bathe in warm water, no matter spring autumn summer and winter, I like to soak in bathtub. Now, I still able to sit inside the bathtub but as long as I wanted to lay down, it is little bit hard.

During that time the triangular Jacuzzi was still rare item, besides, only the crazy would buy triangular Jacuzzi, it wasting too much water, having one bathe in Jacuzzi equal to three times bathing for one house.

Grievance....

The last thing...

One word....running for few steps hard to breathe, going up to third floor too difficult, my 400meters running achievement, as if it was my former life's thing.

Retribution....

"What life mean !!!" I sat on chair in front of the desk, reviewing my drill book, sighed, directly hit my head to desk, "Better go die!"

"You fucking damn have boyfriend! I don't have any!"

The person who was sitting on my bed and also reviewing was Yan Yan. She has been nagging me like forever.

I looked at pile of the drill books....oh, I still have man!

Still very good looking man...

He is also faithful one.

Made a fist...I endured!

Every time I thought about Kang Yu, my face gloomy could not complaint to the heaven, it still betters for me that I able to live, and then I hugged my school bag and smile like idiot.

Yan Yan rolled her eyes, looking at me, "You act strange, crying for while and then smiling, when you going out never mentioned to people that you are my big sister, shameful!"

I left her to be, inside my heart I thought that tomorrow Saturday, I have made appointment with Kang Yu to review my lessons, looking at the clock in my desk, woah, almost eleven, I should go for sleep because sleeping is so important for girls, I could not have any dark circle.

Hurried I tidied up my desk, going out to wash my face and then go to my bedroom, jump to my bed, laying down, "Good night!"

I closed my eyes, I did not care what Yan Yan nagging in bed.

The most important—have good sleep now.

If have good sleep, would have good complexion and then have good skin.

It is only my skin that good so that it needs pay extra attention.

After being fat, I realized some part in my body similar to the pig, one I touch bed, I can get sleep immediately, every morning I oversleep, when I am running I little bit similar with the group of elephants, brushing teeth and washing my face, wearing my uniform, the most important is wearing my hat because now I am bold. Go out without less anything. I tell my mom before I go out for supplementary class, as if bird that free from cage, directly I am heading to Kang Yu's house. But it is only for few steps then I barely hard to breathe.

Gravity for the fatty is such depressing and frustrating matters!

This is the first time I go to Kang Yu place after I become fat, when I arrived in front of the door, Uncle Shen is coincidentally preparing to go shopping earlier, he saw me but not recognized me. I greet him and asked him does Kang Yu at upstairs, but his footsteps stopped and asked me back: "Little girl, who are you?"

I really feel little bit shy to tell him who I am, I afraid he would shock, since I

"reborn" everyone who knows me before were shocked after I told them, seeing he quite ages, I afraid to shock him and get heart attack, I am sinful.

I really don't know how to answer him.

14.2

Chapter 14

Part 2 (Two)

Senior High School started

Seeing me keep quiet, not expected that Uncle Shen even has super rich imagination, full with many romantic things, he said to me, "Little Girl, our Kang Yu has already have someone he likes, although today generation is quite opened, but trying to snatch people's boyfriend is still immoral, still better don't do it. Uncle is an experienced person, seeing you looks..." he looked at me, he even spent more than one minute to find word to describe me, finally he found one, "See you grow up... as shiny rounded bead, our Little Yu is so thin, it not suitable for you, I have friend who has son, you quite compatible for him, I can introduce both of you to...."

I sweating, I know that friend's son, I have seen him, he even $\frac{3}{4}$ times fatter than me.

Awkwardly I stood in front of the door, cannot enter and also cannot back, I only patiently listened Uncle Shen lecturing me a like rice cooker, kukuchacha, unstoppable.

Cannot bear anymore, I wanted to tell him loudly that I am Ou Yang Miao Miao, Kang Yu with bleary-eyes and still wearing his vest and short pant, walking down from upstairs. It still middle June but he not even afraid for cold.

But still he looked so handsome even with his short pant.

When he saw me, suddenly his eyes flashed, " Miao Miao, why are you coming this early?"

In my heart, early your fart, didn't you see I get blocked, hurried help me.

When Uncle Shen heard Kang Yu called my name, his mouth wide open, as if he got stroke, titled his head looked at Kang Yu, "Little Yu, you called... her what?"

Kang Yu does act nothing is mattered, told him naturally, "Miao Miao ah, my maiden!"

After that Uncle Shen looked as if got terrible stroke sickness, half of his body shaking.

Finally Kang Yu understood, “Oh, I forgot to tell you, Miao Miao she...” he glanced at me, perhaps he wanted to tell him that all because the hormone shot effect, but I pretending not to hear that words, once I heard it I ventilate (get in left ear out from right ear), can’t help, the words able to effect my heart, so that he tried to explain in other way: “Miao Miao this time is having her second growth so changes her hairstyle is normal.”

Second stage of growth! I haven’t done with my first stage growth how come this is the second stage!

Uncle Shen is dumbstruck.

Kang Yu looked him get ready to go out, “Didn’t say want to buy soy milk, hurried go or else it would be sold out, hurried, hurried!”

Uncle Shen finally gained himself, “Oh yeah, Soy milk...” but he still curious about me, still looked on my way, “Little Yu, it not right ah, Growing up is not that fast, last month I still saw Miao Miao as skinny as stick, but today...”

“She is not your maiden, you don’t be so busy doing, go, buying the soy milk...” Kang Yu pushed him to go outside.

“It is not, I just want to know...” Uncle Shen still turned his back.

Kang Yu does not give him a chance to ask any question, when he back he has locked the door, so he cannot see anything.

Uncle Shen felt little bit complicated to buy soy milk.

Kang Yu said to me, “I go to brush my teeth and wash my face, you wait for me.”

I nodded, obediently sitting in the living room waiting for him.

Not long after that, he looked refreshing, walking to down stairs, “Do you want to have breakfast?”

“I have ate already.” I put my bag on his the desk, take out my English drill book.

“Very good, very obediently.” He closer to me, “I will take out the drill that I have done, I thought some of the questions might appear at examination.”

“Oh yeah? Hurry up!” My English is too bad while his has good guessing for questions.

He took out some papers, pointed at the question with red mark, “This is some of them, you take a look, have preparation.”

I am so serious to see, “Grammar, I hate tenses so much.” The tenses in English simply are abnormal.

“Multiple choices and fill in the blank, the probability it comes out is bigger, you must learn it, although the point not many but one point still worth.”

I took the notes, I even used five colored pen to mark it, suddenly thought about Uncle Shen, “You later don’t speak that way to Uncle Shen, I saw he quite shocked.”

“HaHa, I rather him get shock than you!”

The truth!

Now my attitude towards hormones, fat, and also my sickness, everything can harm me deeply, after I heard what he said, I feel lot better.

“Well...that, Uncle Shen is not outsider.” He is his savior, he even staying at his house.

“It is fine, he will be understood. But you, do you feel uncomfortable with your body? There still one week before the examination, you don’t exhaust yourself, take care.”

“You rest assured, my mom quite strict about this, I only review until 11 pm, moreover if I pass one of two minutes, my light still turned on, my mom would shoo me to go to bed.”

Yesterday I slept early, so that my mom did not have chance.

“The day during examination, will your mom and dad come?” suddenly his eyes gleaming with expectation.

I thought over and over, “I don’t want them to send me off, both of them must

be stood on the examination entrance, waiting for me, on that way I would be more nervous."

"That's great! I will send you and also wait for you!" His pair of eyes looked excited.

"I don't want! I must be so nervous!" if he really waiting for me outside, I might get distracted during exam.

"What are you nervous for, I will be your supporters, not eating you! After you done with the exam, I will sent you back to your home, also buy you desserts, strolling." Why I feel that the most important part that he said was after the examination finished.

Could it be counted as dating, or something like using all the opportunity, it is kind of method.

After I thought for while if Dad and Mom are really sending me off, we must be directly go home after the examination done, during that time I won't have any chances to meet him, it would be three days after then I able to meet him.

Well, it makes sense after I thought it.

I compromised.

"Okay! But we cannot go home too late!" or else I can't explain.

"Do you think that I might be so thoughtless?" He glanced at me, but he looked extremely happy from the way he speaking.

Man, should be progressed.

Later on, we are studying seriously, Uncle Shen took few times to peek on me, but he directly chases away by Kang Yu to downstairs every time he spotted by him, when time showed three o'clock in the afternoon, Kang Yu said that time to have break^{1]}, he brought me to stroll in Garden.

14.3

Chapter 14

Part 3 (Three)

Senior High School started

When night comes, he naturally sent me off.

Because I have missed the school for one month, while the entrance examination date is coming nearer, I have to work harder for reviewing my drill books. My first goal is entering Girl's high school, because I thought it has good quality and nice, the second choice is Hong Qiao High School because it was my alma mater and this is the most important, my alma mater entrances score is not low. In order to be at same school with Kang Yu, I must work hard for it.

In the blink of eyes when the examination date came, the good and bad, finally I made my Dad and Mom to give up sending me off to the examination place, once I went out from home, I rushed to the bus station, Kang Yu has been there, waiting for me.

I rushing there breathless, Kang Yu stretched his hand to take my bag and put on his back, "Bring the pen?"

"Bring."

"Bring rubber eraser (pencil / pen eraser)"

"Bring."

"Have you brought the important copied notes?"

"Bring." He really is talkative.

"The examination's ID card?"

"Bring!" who will forget of this!

"Very good." He nodded satisfaction.

I rolled my eyes, he treated me as if kid.

Got to the bus, he looked alike storm-troopers (charge and break through enemy lines), trying to give me an empty seat so I could sit down, and then he

realized that he still had his heavy bag on his hand.

“What you bring?” curiously I asked him because he was not joining the exam.

“Water, towel, soothing ointment, and snacks!” he answered me.

“Are those for me?”

“Nonsense, it not for me, relax, the water is distilled water, the towel is the new ones, the soothing ointment because the weather quite hot it could be used to freshen up, the snack is jerky that you like the most, it’s guarantee from genuine beef, not the artificial favor. You can chew it when you have afternoon break during reviewing.”

Oh Heaven, he really thoughtful.

He is more like my father compare to my real father.

Hence, I even moved by him.

The examination not in my own school, it was in other school, we—the students of Hong Qiao Junior High is joining the examination in Tian Shan High School, it not so far from our school, about 30 minutes, the other school is Xian Xia High School, because of Yan Yan school – transferred, her examination and mine not so close, that why she is having her entrance examination in Xian Xia High School. This school is further than mine so Yan Yan must wake up earlier than me by ten minutes.

When arrived at the examination place, all the students who are joining the exam are coming one after another, I saw the Shuang Twins (Da Shuang and Xiao Shuang), Xu Ying, Cong Li Jun, who are greeting each others, Liu Li Jun and Fan Jun because of them had accepted to Sheng Zhi so they did not need to join the examination.

It becomes habit during this time for us to say, “How’s the review?”

And then all of us would say, “I don’t read any, messed, I don’t know how the exam because not read the questions anymore.”

Important, usually for the moderate even the poor performance student, most of them would say such thing, this was the reality.

While the smart students said such thing, it totally could not be believed

because it is top ten lies in China. Whenever heard it just thought it heard nothing.

While waiting for the examination room to be opened, we were matching the numbers, just to check which room we are belonging to, so that when the room is opened and started we would not be in chaos. Checking on books, notes, reviewed drilled and all that regarding to the examination stuffs, all eyes looked so nervous.

Waiting for the examination to start, we have already prepared.

Kang Yu asked me, “Don’t be nervous!”

Actually I was not that nervous, but because he mentioned, it made me became nervous.

He took out the towel and helped me to wipe my sweat, but I didn’t sweat, after he wiped, he started to wipe his sweat. But actually he was the one who sweating.

“Miao Miao, cautious, but after you done, no need to re-check it because more you check it is easier to get wrong!”

This is the wise saying for those who joining examination.

I nodded.

“Good, you go!” he said, after he said the talking to himself and left me and went to the examination way.

I pulled him, “It’s me who go for examination.”

He hit his head, “Oh yeah, it’s your examination, then you go!”

I sighed, “I am okay, you rest assured!”

“I am not nervous!”

Oh yeah, not nervous, but why he held my hand not let go of me, he even shaking, if early I knew I would not let him to come, on contrary it was me who taking care of him.

He dawdling for few minutes and finally let me went in to have my examination.

I turned my back to see Kang Yu who stood in front of the door a like ant in hot pan.

Ah~ sighed, I did not know after I done with my exam, would he still alive?

When the teacher came, they rushed us to get into the examination room, I did not care, straight forwardly go into, sat down on my seat, took out pencil, Examination ID, Eraser, others than those, other was not allowed to put on the desk.

Days before examination, in my mind there always is Kang Yu and also the exam that I haven't finished.

When the teacher who guarded the examination came, I have forgot all the things, only took the deep breathe.

The bell ringing, the teacher distributing the examination paper and the exam is started.

Third year examination, There were six subjects tested in Shanghai, the full score was 510, there were Chinese, Math, English, the total of each was 120 scores, Physics, Chemistry, politics, each of them 50 scores.

The first day examination: Morning – Chinese, afternoon – Politic.

The second day examination: Morning – math, afternoon – Physics.

The third day examination: Morning – English, afternoon – chemistry.

When all the subjects are tested, everyone would ask, "How's the examination!"

To be honest, to be asked this kind of question, subconscious mind wanted to hear it well, but if the person who got asked was Xu Ying, she would say no good, it quite strike heart.

It meant that her examination well-passed.

The good students are always like this, it obviously they did well but always reply no good.

So this is called as the top ten lies for Chinese students.

After three days, the examination done, the first thing that done by the third

year student were to tear the book, or they sold all the book to the second book store, except they were taking the supplementary or retake so the book would neither torn nor sold. While me, perhaps I would burn the book or gave it to my grandmother as substitute for firewood. I hate these books.

Mid July, I returned to school, the teacher would release the score transcript.

That was one of the most anxious and most torturing days. when I saw my test scores, I was dumbfounded.

Impossible, how could it be?

No, there still hopes!

28 July, I was eating watermelon at home, I got the admission letter from Shi San Nv girl's high school.

I unexpected succeed to enter my first choice, hadn't they said that Shi San Nv set up higher scores?

Impossible!

Dreams shattered....

September 1996, I was entering Shi San Nv Girl's high school class 1-3.

My High School life is begin...

Note:

1] 劳 Lao 逸 Yi 结 Jie 合 He : have break / rest (to strike a balance between work and rest [idiom])

Chapter 15 (15.1)

Chapter 15

Part 1 (One)

Love Rival Appeared

The High School has started after one month. It was also the last day of the National Day. It was my last time gathered with my best fellow sisters. Da Shuang entered to one of the capital city school – Jian Qing High School, Xiao Fan and Liu Li Jun entered Sheng Zhi school, but not at same class, by coincide Xiao Fan and Kang Yu were at same class, Xiao Shuang and Cong Li Jun were the “best companions” that took sick leave often for the last semester in our third Junior High, both of them were entered Shanghai Modern Technology School. They were choosing Secretariat majority in English and also same class. While Xu Ying effortless entered to Shi San Nv and coincide she was same class with me. The last was Yan Yan who re-takes her exam and finally entered the alma mater school in Junior high. World just too miraculous, not encountered then did not know.

Although we were separating, but some of us still together, all of us still missed the days we had before that’s why we had gathered once again just to enhance our feeling. Everyone was happy for me, I had sick for one month, but I did not fail my entrance examination even I passed. My body recovered, it was really double happiness, dare not to believe on my own luck.

I didn’t think so because I still had wished to study at same school with Kang Yu. My admission to Shi San Nv not really made me happy but things had done, so there was no used to remember anymore.

If wanted to blame, then blame Kang Yu, who asked him to guess the questions very well, it even made me gained high score for English which is my weakness.

Aiya....

Now there was useless to say, because the most important thing to focus was my love rival.

To be honest, since Kang Yu and I entered High School, we were rare met each

other, it almost more than one month.

"Xiao Fan, is the school have many female students?" I didn't mean to blame on Gods and accuse others, just as prevention, distance might create third party and the worst separation.

There was saying about—at that time breathtaking, it's only haven't seen the world yet.

During the Junior high, I always wandering in front of his eyes, so seeing my presence kind of habit. But now, I didn't wandering in front of his eyes anymore, I fat and also not beautiful and not adorable. I afraid when others who more beautiful, more adorable who wandering in front of him and then I would turn into his past.

I really worried.

"Many, we have more than half females, do you think it many or not?" Xiao Fan is looking at me.

Nonsense, Hong Qiao is female and male school (mixed-gender school), of course there would be half male and half female.

"What I mean is the beauty ones, the adorable ones, are they many or not?"

"Our Miao Miao is worried, Xiao Fan, for the sake of our fellow best sister, you must have good look of Kang Yu, it only Miao Miao and Kang Yu who left as pair from our class so the important point is you must protect the other party."

I felt grateful almost tearing because of Da Shuang, she really my good fellow sister, understood my worries so well.

Xiao Fan said, "Only leaving the school for one month, talking about adultery, how could we know."

It so right, now not really familiarized so there would not be any movement, but my heart still worried so I drank cola.

"Miao Miao, don't worry, Kang Yu isn't that type of man!" Xiao Shuang said after she refill her cola, "Although not together during High School, but your house is close to his, during the weekend both of you still can meet, don't be afraid, groundless fear!"

It still better if she said nothing, once she said, it stabbed onto my wound spot.

"We haven't seen each other for more than a month, even during the last National day, he always excused he is busy!" I complained.

"What?" all of them were curious and wide opened their eyes.

I gripped the glass, looking at the bubbles soda of cola, "I don't know, he said recently Uncle Shen has new products, very sold able, he wanted to help so that he didn't have time to meet me, yesterday I had phoned him, asked him to go out on Saturday to visit zoo and ice-skating but he said he did not have time so I just reminded him to take care of himself."

"There must be something!" Liu Li Jun lifts her spectacles, her eyes flashing seeing me.

"Don't scare me! I have poor health before, now I cannot face any shock."

"I don't intend to scare you, in drama they are always said that once the boy-girl friend has be passionately in love, but when ones said that busy, didn't have time to meet, not long after that, they would be broke up!"

Liu Li Jun is crazy fan of drama, she loves romance drama the most, so when she said, my heart pondering.

"Don't scare Miao Miao, you see her face is already white pale!" Xiao Shuang took one piece of chicken and stuffed into Liu Li Jun's mouth.

"It's not like that, I just feel something amiss here, he was not like this before! Before he liked to plaster me, if I didn't meet him, his face would be darken than pot and also scary."

Xiao Fan chewing her fried spinach, she used chopstick pointed at me, "I will go to see him, ask him clearly."

"It's not good!" I shrunk.

"If not ask clearly, your heart will not in peace, although get dump, it must be you who dump him, there is no way you let him to dump you!" Xiao Fan glared me, "If you are the one who get dump, then you are embarrassed us."

Xiao Fan is always be valiant but never thought she could be such valiant.

"Miao Miao, I agreed with Xiao Fan, go and ask, don't bottle up inside your heart! I see Kang Yu is also nothing, if her really faithless, dump him, when you dump him don't forget to reward him two slaps."

Cong Li Jun since her sick leave, Kang Yu had taken her place in student committee so she hates him so much until now. No wonder she could say Kang Yu like that, I could see she hates him until gritting her teeth and trying to seek opportunity to give him fierce bite.

"The ones who agree put hands up!" Xiao Fan suddenly put her hand up.

"I agree." Xiao Shuang followed.

Not to mention Cong Li Jun, she even put two ups.

Xu Ying nodding her head and put up her hands.

Liu Li Jun wiped her mouth and said, "I agree too."

This... they forced me.

I was glancing at Yan Yan, since she has not put up her hand, looking at her to help.

She not even looked at me, she even busy herself to fill her mouth with sweet sour pork ribs.

This little sister, have or haven't there is no difference.

"Really must go?" I asked.

Ten eyes were looking at me, "go!"

My stomach grumbled while I swallowing my saliva, others have too many people, I could not win over them so at last I put my own hand up and lowered my head.

"Okay... I go... go then go!"

**

Saturday, I gathered my courage, pretended to be strong, went out from home with loftiness, watching attentively from in front of Kang Yu's house, immediately I hide at one of corner, using the current courage, I felt myself wilt, if being asked, yesterday I still made the draft but now I have forgotten, could

not remember anything.

My eyes flashed as if radar followed Kang Yu.

Where he go? Didn't he say that he help in Uncle Shen's store, why didn't he at store but walking on contrary way.

Something fishy!

It really something fishy!

Immediately my pair of eyes changed alike Athena radar, unconsciously followed on him.

I followed him to food market, seeing him got on bus to the textile market, I also rushed to follow, fortunately the textile market was crowded so I tried to squeezed myself to crowded and not let him to find out.

When arrived at textile market, he got off from the bus, naturally I followed him.

Seeing at the front gate of the Textile Market, I got frustrated because why did he come here! Didn't he say that he help Uncle Shen? Not right, Uncle Shen is selling food, he must go to Shi Liu Bu.

Whatever I have came, so I must manage to know clearly.

I followed him with ten meters distance, hiding left and right, from one place to others, now I was not as lithe and thin as sparrow as before, only few steps I almost run out breathe, how could I follow him, my two legs have already ached. Fortunately the weather was not hot, or else my sickness might relapse.

Finally, I saw him went into one store.

15.2

Chapter 15

Part 2 (Two)

Love Rival Appeared

From far away I read the store name— Gao Sheng Qi Qiu

Buying balloon?

Why he came here?

Thus, I sneaky made my own way outside the shop's glass window to see him, I squatted little bit to secretly look inside.

I spotted Kang Yu together with girl who looked alike Junior high schooler, he seemed to praise the girl, but I didn't know what he said, both of them were happily laughing.

You are Good Kang Yu, so you are disloyalty, incessantly. You even touch the junior schoolers, you are overly, I never thought there would be a day you also cheated on me.

I was extremely angry. A pair of mother and son who is shopping suddenly came to approaching me.

"Mom, what does that big sister do? Does she hungry, why does she eat the decorative plant on the pot?"

I turned back and I glared with deathly sight to that little brother.

That little brother scared with me, hide at his mother back.

"Xiao Bao (Little Bao), be good, don't be afraid, let's go!" the mother took the son leaving, before leaving she even not forgot to murmured, "It so pity, so young but crazy, unknown who child she is!"

You are the one who crazy!

My heart hurt, I force to pull one of the decorative plants of one shop, biting hard with my mouth.

Kang Yu, you are heartless, not satisfied with what you has, you even made me

being called crazy by others, you are rotten bastard!

“Little Sister, do you want balloon? We have Mickey Mouse balloon, new product, do you want one?”

When I was in very bad mood, in front of the store, there was auntie who came out, perhaps she spotted me from the glass window, thought that I wanted to buy balloon.

“Not buy! Who want to buy your balloon!”

“It fine if you are not buying any, but don’t damage my decorative plans!” that aunty pair of eyes looked so pity on her decorative plant which destructed by me, the green leaf almost wiped clean.

My nervous hand loosened up, “who damage your decorative plant, it has been like before!”

I stubborn did not want to admit, that I was the person who pull out all the leaves even ate it.

Could not blame because I haven’t had my breakfast, moreover I have walked so far that’s why I was hungry.

I didn’t know whether I would have diarrhea or not.

“Whom daughter are you, does not have upbringing!” that aunty pissed off and starting to shout at me.

“Whom... who is not has upbringing, you are the one who does not have upbringing, your whole family is not have upbringing!” I pissed off too, looking at that aunty, I knew that girl must be her daughter, they looked exactly so alike, both of them are vixen.

“How can you little girl speaking on this way, swearing!”

“Who swearing at you, you are the one who swore me first!”

Paused for moment, I was arguing with the auntie outside the store, we arguing so fiercely, no need to say, we arguing to this point, if Kang Yu didn’t know then he is blind or deaf.

Not long after, he appeared.

“Miao Miao!” he quite surprised to see me.

I gathered my courage, ignored him, but the truth I wanted to cry.

I am so faithfully, loving him but how could he cheat on me, stepping on two boats.

“Wang Ye, my dad has done with the calculating, those balloons with the toys, all the total is 315 Yuan, here your change 85 Yuan, take...” suddenly someone went out from the shop door, one familiar face, looking at me, dumbfounded for moment and said, “is this Fu Jin.”

“Cao Min!” I was surprised, she was my Junior High classmate and also Kang Yu’s. She also studied in Sheng Zhi and by coincide both of them study at same class.

“Wang Ye, you bring Fu Jin come here, why didn’t you tell me? You are really...” she passionately walking toward me, “Fu Jin, Wang Ye recently is earning much money, does he do it for you, hehe...”

“What?” I stressed out.

“Aiya, didn’t you know? The day before the National day, my place lacked of people, we also had new product supply, we were intending to put balloons stall in People’s Square, Shanghai selling the balloons and also plastic toys. We were so busy, fortunately Wang Ye wanted to buy auto-bike, has shortage of money, he looked for me to help, you know this is almost the end of year, the business is quite busy and earn much money! To unknown, Wang Ye really someone smart, he even came to my place to buy the stuffs, he sells it by himself, he really too much, at last his business is better than mine!”

Of course I know that when National day arrived, Nan Jing street, People’s square (Shanghai), all of those street are crowded by people, the balloons, the hammer balloons, angel’s ring, kind of plastic and foil balloons with cartoon were sold everywhere in the street. The price even sold double for the normal price. Because of the event, people tend to buy it.

“You mean that Kang Yu recently working at your place, and also buy yours product, during the National day he went to people’s square to sell the balloons!”

“That’s right, today he is coming to pay those products!”

My mouth open-wide, my pair of eyes stiffen, I didn’t dare to look at Kang Yu.

Suddenly I remembered about that little girl, I... I still doubted, both of them were looked so happy, I was not mistaken because I saw it by pair of my own eyes.

“Who is the girl inside the store?”

“My cousin sister, today our store have new product, the Mickey Mouse balloons, she is fan of Mickey Mouse, so that my dad let her to take one, why? Kang Yu also knows her, few days ago he also came to my place to take some products, teaching my cousin sister English so that she passed her examination with 90 scores, she is so happy.”

My sweat streaming down alike heavy rain, what should do, I was wronged, my mistake even too absurd!

I moved, did not want to stay, “I... sorry to disturb, I go home, bye!”

Cao Min looked at me strangely, “Fu Jin?”

“Where are you heading?”

When I wanted to turn, Kang Yu has already stood in front of me alike big wall block my way.

I lift my head up, looking at his face, he is so smart, he must be known that I had followed him, I still asked about the girl, based on his IQ, he must be guessed.

I sweat more severe, tugging my own fingers, “I just passed...”

Whisper!

I heard Kang Yu humph voice.

“Today the weather is nice!” suddenly I pointed at sky.

Good your fart, it is afternoon but no sun shines.

“Confessed got leniency, defy got strict.” He eyes as if dagger looked at me.

I was shocked, but confessed.

"I haven't meet you for month, you always tell me that you are so busy, last time when I was reunion with Xiao Fan and others, they were talking about adultery thingy... no, I have thought you might cheat on me... so they suggested me to ask you clearly, today I was looking for you at home, but I have seen you walked out and came here, I... I was pissed off for moment... so that I followed you. And then when I spotted you with that girl and looked so intimate, I am extremely angry, without my realization I pulled all the leaves of the decorative plants and even ate it. I still don't know whether I might get diarrhea or not, still... I thought you are step on two boats, I became angrier so that I argued with the auntie, this all. It was my fault; I must not doubt you, you..." I peek on him one glanced, it shocked me, his face is more frighten compare to Tibetan Mastiff.

"All is my fault, I won't repeat it next time, if not you divorce^{1]} me."

I was panic, but not really sure from which drama I watched, whatever I just said whatever I knew.

"Divorce you! Humph!"

I shrink my neck, wondering did he at his rage or he even want to hit me.

"I have kept you to this fat and white, divorce, I make my own loss!"

I thought, my current state white and fat, all was because the hormone shots.

Fine, half, I have thought to diet, but every times he found out he would force me to eat more so that I still remain fat and white.

Note:

1] 休 xiū : literally mean to rest but the word often used as divorce during the imperial time for the nobleman when they repudiate their wife.

15.3

Chapter 15

Part 3 (Three)

Love Rival Appeared

When Cao Min heard our conversation, she dumbstruck, shocked and said, “I always thought that Wang Ye is someone henpecked, so that not, too good, Wang Ye you are really our pride!”

I understood her meaning, when I was still class leader during our junior high, all the male students had forced by me and didn’t enjoy any benefit, now when they looked at me surrender and asking mercy from Kang Yu, naturally they are feel so pleased since they hate me so much.

That auntie was different, didn’t know whether she is Cao Min’s mom or not, she looked at me with pity sighted, her face wrinkle.

“Today kids, really strange what actually their head fill? What adultery? What divorce? How old are you guys!”

Oh my grandma (slang word), my adultery relationship with Kang Yu has been known.

I was too failed as person.

Kang Yu mood was worsen, standing in place, he hurried took me out.

Of course I not dare to rebel, my heart am chilled.

Messed, I saw him angry, would he find somewhere and then punched me!

I followed him went out from the textile market, get in the bus, it seems that we were not going to Uncle Shen’s house direction, instead we were heading to Xu Jia Hui, he pulled me down from bus, passing the Jia Bang street, and arrived at Jian Guo Xi (west district).

“Arrived!” His face is still dark.

I saw it, but not dare to take another glanced, my eyes looked at other way, looked at in front, I realized there was one auto-bike store at in front.

“Do you want to buy a bike?” suddenly I remembered what Cao Min told me

before that he wanted to buy auto-bike so that he worked at her place.

Humph!

I shrink, he still angry....

We walking into the store, Kang Yu talked to the storekeeper, "I want to buy third gear with SUV shift!"

I was stunned, when was he had that much money, he even wanted to buy shifting bike, during that time, auto-bike was simply similar with BMW car in bike category, very expensive, I only have silver ladies bike which cost 600 Yuan, because of my weight, the wheel narrowed, not suitable to long ride because the tires would wear off badly, so I not ride it anymore.

It was different with Shifting off-road auto-bike which had thick tires and also wide.

Kang Yu chooses one of the black off-road auto-bike, he asked the storekeeper to raise the seat and then he checked the bike and walked in circle, very satisfied and then he paid for the bike. He also choose the bike lock, make the installation for night lights and add back seat, all of it cost 1580 Yuan.

He really had money, he rich.

Early if I know selling balloons could be this profitable, I might sell too.

Recently I also have shortage of money, sold some of my manhwa, my purse also got skim.

After he paid, he was in good mood, installed the lock, while the shopkeeper was enthusiastically sent us off. I was secretly followed Kang Yu at his back, to know that one is in the wrong, so that I didn't dare to rebel.

"Hop in!" suddenly he said.

I saw he ride the bike, he speaking without seeing me so I knew he still angry.

Hurried I sat on the bike.

"Have proper sit."

"En!"

He was starting to cycle the pedal and firmly the bike moving.

So this is called as auto-bike, very firm, the changes of speed also good, riding this bike won't take much energy, I did not know where he would bring me, would he bring me to somewhere and then killed me.

Shaking...

But to my unknown in the blink of eyes, we have arrived at Shi San Nv girl's high school...

What he thought, did he want to kill me in here because there won't be anyone during weekend so that he chooses this place to kill me.

Before I able to ask, Kang Yu has already took me from the ride and keep on cycling.

More I thought more frustrated I was...

Along the way he kept quiet, while me, I didn't dare to speak, so this how he carried from west district to here.

Not long after that, we were arrived at Hong Qiao high School.

I not understood.

"30 minutes!" suddenly he exclaimed.

"Hah?"

"It takes 30 minutes from Shi San Nv to Hong Qiao high school! Uh... still okay!"

"What is still okay?" I gathered my courage to ask him, with soft voice.

"Miao Miao, starting from Monday, you must wait for me about 30 minutes, I will come to pick you up from school!" he said.

I dumbfounded.

"Why? Not willing, if you are not willing then..." he turned, his face is darker than before.

Finally I understood, recently he not seeing me, so that he tried to earn more money to buy auto-bike, just to pick me up from school.

I remembered that I ever told him, I felt inconvenient to take public

transportation because inside the bus is cramped alike pack of sardines and I am uncomfortable.

He because of me...

"Willing, I willing, one hundred of willingness!" I nodded my head, my eyes tearing. His facial expression changed little bit better.

"You are not angry with me, aren't you?" softly I asked him.

Humph!

Fine, he is still angry.

"If don't want me to angry, you can! Ride it!"

I get down obediently, waiting for him to explode and scolding me!

"You ride the bike and send me home then I forgive you!" he gave the bike to me.

"Only like this!" stupidly I said.

"What, not willing?" his expression changed.

"No! no!" hurried I took the bike, sat down at the front seat, "I ride, I ride, you get on!"

Humph!

Why he still humping, scared me.

This word, I not dare to say it out.

Waiting for him to get on, immediately I move and even said, "Wang Ye, go!"

Humph!!

This man, today have hump sickness, he hump non-stopped.

Whatever, whatever, I was the one wrong, cannot bother.

I really ride until his home, auto-bike really good, it save up my energy.

When we arrived at home, he face still showed "You still not trust me." He still have that expression, so that I just followed him to upstairs, and still showed me that "I am still angry with you" this kind of expression.

I have thoughts from many aspects, perhaps I might make lose little bit, I kissed his cheek.

It passed! Da Ye (My lord), you are satisfied!

He felt satisfied and then patting my head, “This is the right thing. There won’t be next time, understood!”

“Understood, I won’t dare anymore next time.”

Aiya, finally the mystery of affair, the stormy day had come to end.

Kang Yu really comes everyday to pick me up no matter wind and storm, on this way, we can meet every days and naturally I felt so sweet in my heart.

But, I have little bit worried.

The next reunion, Xiao Fan stretched her hand to me, “Miao Miao, give me 50 Yuan, I guarantee to protect and hold tight your Kang Yu.”

I took out my money, inside I have 50 Yuan, “Can you give me discount.”

“It fixed!”

“I gritted, I gave my money to her, “deal!”

“I dealing with matter, you rest assured!” she happily counting my money.

I really make mistake to be friend with her ah!

Yan Yan face not good, “Actually I wanted to go to Hong Qiao, but who known that it required high scores, too over!”

So that she also aiming my money.

This group of people is too TMD.

After I gave her money, Xiao Fan really fulfilled her commitments, every night she makes report to me about Kang Yu, this money, I satisfied to pay it.

Suddenly one day Xiao Fan told me, “Miao Miao, there is adultery thingy!”

I almost smashed my phone.

“But this time it is man...”

It shocked me, Xiao Fan could you speak slowly without deep breathe.

“Man is more dangerous...” Again in another reunion, Liu Li Jun told me.

“En?” I really not understood.

She brought one BL novel, recently she is fan of BL novel, this girl really have heavy taste, we are not that odd things to see here, Taiwan items, during that time the plot was very subtle and easily to nose bleed, and also able to make the reader to blushing.

When I read the novel, my eyes as if poked out.

What? Could man and man really?

Doomed! Hurried I paid another 50 Yuan, gave it to Xiao Fan.

“Not even need to guard him tightly but also get rid the others “flowers”.”

Xiao Fan: “.....”

The moral lesson, actually the love rival of girl not always other girl but man also can be love rival.

Warning for all the girls..... boyfriend’s crotch of trousers is important but the most important is the little Ju, TMD!

Chapter 16 (16.1)



Chapter 16

Diet must stop before going too far

Half of first year high school semester was passed peacefully, during this time the study load was not really heavy. We were as freshmen in high school, we still able to relax for moment moreover because it is girl's high school. Others than teachers, the school is filled with ladies, about the advantage, naturally there were some, for example during the sport lesson we not needs to hastily go to changing room, we could directly change inside the class. The disadvantage, it difficult for us to move heavy things, looking everywhere there won't be man come to help. Besides, as the saying goes, boys and girls pair up, the workload much lighter, eyes is filled with same gender, playing each other, not really fun and even feel boring.

There are people said since Girl's high school is filled with girls, so that the girl is especially weird and also lesbian. I really need to clear up this things, this was really not exist at least during my three years studying there. I had never seen any lesbians.

But, when we were boring, we liked to role-play.

I don't know those girls who are born in 80's would like to play role-play but at least role-play was interesting game for students like to play during my time.

I also like to play it, it because my real person is more tomboy, very carefree so that my classmate called me husband. Well, I just accept and played along with them. Xu Ying was my first wife, Zeng Xiao Qiu was my second wife, Qi Bing Bing was my third wife and others fourth, fifth, sixth and I did have daughter. My class leader was someone so small and exquisite and played as my daughter so that these people grouped to be one big family. After three year in high school, Wang Yue still called me father everyday and Xu Ying as mother. While the others wives also called me either husband or beloved.

Whatever as long as we gathered as family, we were playing happily because it really interesting.

But, this thing, I not dared to tell Kang Yu.

I afraid he would be heart-shocked for him.

Although he could accept it, based on his black-belly character, he would think the way to separate us so that I hide it from him, out from school, I have to remind them not to call me husband or else break off the relations.

Xu Ying had already known that Kang Yu and I was dating, later after others knew, I thought they would be surprised, seeing me in different way, after all those students who were able to listed in Shi San Nv girl's high school, 80% of them were outstanding students. No need to talk about their mind concepts, seeing them one by one likes to read books, I could feel that during the junior high all of them are book-worm, simply could not imagine, during my junior high school I even be someone so brazen by dating with someone along studying.

When they knew, one by one was gossiping.

It scared me, I almost not dared to meet Kang Yu in front of school gate, afraid if someone might find out Kang Yu, they might tear off Kang Yu clothes because there were not boy in school so that they thirst with boy. The most important was they were urgently wanted to know what kind of boy that deathly loves me.

After school ended, I was waiting Kang Yu in front of the food stall across the school, it was because avoiding others. When studying in senior high, if got

caught dating the consequences more severe than junior high, have no choice but to protect my relationship from especially those who liked gossip, to avoid things leaked from their mouth.

Outside the store they were selling stinky tofu and radish pancake / pastry, every times I would stand there for while, even only the smells, this kind of deep-fried food, it was blacklist no 1 in my menu list. First because the heat too high, second because my fat, I suffered from excessive internal heat, besides that I have mouth ulcer, it almost tortured me for one month. Eating these kinds of food same as playing with my life. It would pain me every time I have my meal.

I sniffed, so good, it would taste perfect by drinking plum juice, my heart would feel content.

Sinister!!!!!!!!!!!!

After half hour, Kang Yu arrived in time, not past even a minute.

I hurried sit on his back, “Coming!”

“Want to eat?” he pointed at the stinky tofu, perhaps he saw me glancing the foods.

I shook my head, “If I eat it, I won’t able to eat during dinner.”

“It good if you know, you like to eat this kind of unhealthy food!” he turned to his bike handle, tune, took my bag and put it onto the in front basket of the bike.

“Not healthy? Every times Yan Yan meets you, you bought it for her but never heard you said this to her.” I sat on back seat, criticized him.

“Her health is not something that I should consider of, the person who should consider must be brother in law, I don’t have time to think about it. Just waiting until the time when I married you, you see whether I would ignore her or not?”

Suddenly I felt my sweat dropping as big as beans.

Kang Yu ah, Kang Yu, what do you want me to say about you, there is time I feel you are too...black.

To make the best use of everything and after you done just throw it.

I don’t know what would Yan Yan feel when she knew, would she cry or not.

I think, she won't because both of them have similarity in some ways.

But about marriage... I feel so sweet in my heart even my mouth said in reversed.

"Who want to marry with you... move! Cart driver!" I patted his back twice.

Kang Yu smiled, said "Cart driver, well there also have Fu in words, you are destined with me!"

(车 che 夫 Fu : cart driver, while writing husband in Chinese word there also Fu character.) I don't have time to play words game with him, besides that I cannot win over him, just followed what he loves to say.

"Let's go!"

Kang Yu immediately pedaling forward, he looked so proud.

Aiya, if in the future we are married, I can feel my heart sweet but also shaking, I am really not match to him, later in the future he must be the one who bully me.

My grievance, too grievance.

Having puppy love, how can I gamble to my future?

To be honest, I believe in Kang Yu, seeing him everyday pedal the bike sending me home, although it is off road bike type, I have heavy weight, this still able to say I am burden too.

So I wanted to diet.

Diet has turned to be my life goal.

16.2



Chapter 16

Part 2 (Two)

Diet must stop before going too far

Fortunately, the hormones cause the puffiness. Slowly by slowly become little bit reduced, compare for the initial weight, 180 pounds, now, it has reduced 20 pounds, as additional I don't eat white rice anymore, no junk food, after entering senior high, I loss 10 pounds again so that I not that fat anymore. I am categorized as medium fat, it is progressing but I never feel enough.

Yan Yan said it lucky for me because I have tall posture, I have height 168cm, fat but also well proportioned, limbs not fat, it only chest, stomach and butt, regarding chest... Yan Yan honestly told me that at least I have 10 pounds for it.

I also think this area progressed to be "hot", I don't know whether it is influenced by the hormones or not, I just age 16 years old but almost have D cup size.

My burden is heavier.

Every time when my mom is washing mine and Yan Yan bra, hang together to dry it, I have kind of feeling.

This size of cup, no matter I see it, it look alike cap.

Once I sighed, Yan Yan looked me with murderous sighted. She smashed everything that she saw.

"Sis, are you still human, your cup is too discriminate A's cup!"

Yan Yan eats lot but not gained fat, she grows taller and has same height with me, but her weight less than 95 pounds, naturally her breast area also got influence.

But what's to envy for.

When she joins the sport lesson, then she will know the feeling of these two ball moves.

Really TM tired!

Cannot, must diet, if this keep continuing, there will be a day I must wobble because of it.

Thus, diet is my daily homework, others than eat, I also do exercise, example after having meal, 30 minutes later I will have jumping rope, or not I will bring Cai Xi to run, running until it showed its tongue, and then go home.

When winter holiday in senior high, I have already lost 8 pounds.

My stomach smaller little bit, but still has meat, but at least it won't show when I dressed.

But, once I stripped my clothes, the fact I still that fat.

168 cm height, with weight 140 pounds, I am still fat.

Humph!

Changes for the success, I keep on working hard.

Initially, I want to gradually cut the fat, but the fact was far from the expectation, during the winter holiday, I went to my alma mater Hong Qiao high school, that day Kang Yu was back to school, so I had made appointment to meet him at the school garden, so that I waited him at school.

In his class, I knew Xiao Fan and Cao Min, so that I thought there would not have any problem, and decided to find and reunite with them.

I stood outside the class, took a peek, I could not find Kang Yu not even his shadow, I upset where he gone, even Xiao Fan also not in class, no teacher. I so confused as if porridge that stirred in pot. Cao Min spotted me and then she called me enthusiastically.

“Fu Jin!”

I bathe with cold sweat, this little brat still remember my nickname.

Once she shouted, everyone in class looked at my direction.

I was awkward, standing in front the class while my face blushed.

Suddenly I heard girl voice from inside the class: “So this is the Fu Jin that you guys like to mention?”

This word sounded so normal, but the way and tone of speaking really piercing

into ears and made someone felt not comfortable.

I looked at that woman... aiya, she really beautiful girl, very beautiful, she also have fair white skin, her hair long and black, has big pair eyes, as big as Da Shuang and Xiao Shuang's eyes. The most important was her body shape, she has curved body shape and also slender and thin figure. Especially her waist area, it was similar with the novel and manhwa that I liked to read, as if it gonna break with slight strength. I dared to say, after ten years this girl might attract many men.

That girl looked at me, she raised her head, as if looking down at me, as if I had offended her.

Perhaps it was because woman six senses, suddenly I had something alike premonition, I paused for moment and turned back, I felt if I stayed any longer at this place, something big might happen.

When I intending to leave, that girl running toward me, behind her there still two others girl followed at her back who I did not know.

"Hey, you fatty, you are not our school student, why coming here!"

Fat... fatty girl!

After I heard, I could feel my eyes as big as bull eye.

This person, how could she so impolite.

I really pissed off and stopped my step, turned back: "I come to find Kang Yu!"

"He isn't here, he is helping the teacher to bring winter homework, he won't back for moment!" she still raised her chin looked so arrogant, between her words there was another meaning (double meaning) as if she closed to Kang Yu.

"Oh yeah? Well, I will wait for him, I have appointment with him, we will go to garden, playing." I also not showed my weakness, counter soldiers with arms, water with an earth weir (to adopt measures appropriate to the actual situation)

Suddenly she looked unhappy, her face closer to me, "You are shameless, he isn't here, you still waiting him?"

Wo Kao (swearing words) said that I am shameless, could you ask yourself, who is shameless here.

I was so angry, I directly scolded her back, but this place is school, there were lots people, actually my relationship with Kang Yu shouldn't reveal and known by school, so that I did not want to argue with her.

I left!

I was so angry and walking straightly forward, I did not even look back.

But that girl suddenly asked me to stop, "Wait!"

"What to wait? Didn't you ask me to leave?" I turned and shouted at her.

I was suspicious, I could see that her eyes suddenly flashed devilish, I haven't reacted, but her two fellow friends who came with her brought me into their class.

"What do you want?" Three people were holding at my hand, so I could not fight them.

That girl spoke to the entire class, "You guys say, I am beautiful or she is the beautiful one!"

I was stiffen as if thunder bolt during bright sky, I looked the class suddenly silent... all people were looking at her and me.

I felt chilling.

I have grown up until this big, this was the first time I had been looking, watching attentively, it gave me uncomfortable feeling as if I was animal in zoo, people judging me, no dignity.

I have care so much to myself being fat, actually deep inside me, I felt little bit pity to myself but Kang Yu treated me very well, so that the pity feeling could be suppressed to the minimum and never shown on surface.

For fellow readers who fan of Substitute Bride (SB) I hope you guys can wait for little bit longer for the update because I have hard time to translate the chapters.

It quite difficult for me to find "suitable" or "equivalent" English for translating the Chinese. I will update this project as soon as possible after I solve some issues.

16.3



Chapter 16

Part 3 (Three)

Diet must stop before going too far

But today...

It suddenly exploded, at the moment it grew as big as tree.

Who is beautiful?

I could feel my eyes moisten, I could feel being humiliating.

I glared deathly to that three girls, pushed them away, I didn't care too much and left.

When I was walking half way in the corridor, I bumped into Kang Yu.

"Miao Miao, you are here, wait for me and I will immediately distributing the winter homework...Miao Miao? You.... What happen?"

At that moment, my face has wet with tears, I cried, I didn't know whether because I was too angry, too suffer, anxious and vented it out, as if hit on gun.

"Pa" sounded.

I slapped him.

I really used my strength, full strength so that I could feel my hand hurt.

"I don't want to see all of you, you all are bastard! Bastard!"

I was crazily shouting, I used my full strength to push him away, when I was in front at school gate, I crying along the way to home.

My mom was cooking, saw me and asked whether I wanted to eat red braised pork or sour sweet soup, shocked to see me cried alike heavy rain, she put down her vegetable knife.

"Miao Miao... what happen, who bullied you? Ah? Who bullied you?"

"Today everyone in the world is bullying me!" I cried and shouted out loud, I walked into my room.

When I was at my room, I locked it. I hide inside my quilt until night.

After some time, I heard my room door knocked, "Sis, open the door!"

I still hide inside my quilt, while Yan Yan still knocking outside my room, I covered my ears, I did not want to hear anything.

Outside the door, my dad and mom also panic, asking me to open the door.

I did also hear phone ringing at downstairs.

But, at this moment I didn't want to care about anything, I just wanted to hide inside my own world, I didn't want to meet anyone, I didn't care anyone.

When night comes, Yan Yan stood in front my room and said, "Sis, Kang Yu had made few times of phone calls, now he still calling, do you want to receive it?"

"I don't want!" I also didn't want to answer.

"Sis..."

"I don't want, I don't want to hear, tell him, I don't want to meet him for this time, if he dares to come to home, I will break up with him! I am Ou Yang Miao Miao will do what I said!" I roared out my bed, didn't care whether my mom and dad hear it or not, after I shouted, I got back to my bed.

Yan Yan said nothing, perhaps she understood with my current situation, whatever they said it not use.

My dad and mom were coming to annoy me, I just crying for the entire night, after I have thought for one night, I have made decision for one night.

I want to diet, I want to diet!

I was alike possessed, my mind only filled with these two words, cutoff fat!

I really carried out.

Every day I only eat one bowl of chicken soup and one tomato, other than that, I did not eat, I was crazily jumping rope, not only that, I still running inside the room, up and down stairs.

I have been through for ten days, I had lost 13 pounds.

I saw myself in mirror, I could see my collar bone, I also could see my face baby

fat trim down. But there still fat, I didn't satisfy with my diet result. I still complained not enough.

I sat on my bed, I still thinking should I keep on dieting or not.

Actually myself that time, was already at hyper mode to loss my weight, the next thing, I started to stop eating and drinking, no matter how people persuading me, I didn't hear them.

Three days later during night time, I still not eat and drink, suddenly I wanted to watch television, I could not grasp the remote control, it fell down to floor, I was bending my body to take it, when I stood up, suddenly I felt all was black in my surrounded, I didn't know that I was faint and unconscious.

Shocked.

Half hour later, it was Yan Yan who came to my room and found me, just afraid when I was in unconscious state no one found me.

All of my family member was panic and sent me to hospital.

I was diagnosis to have anemia that caused by malnutrition, I almost to have severe heart failure.

Fortunately, Yan Yan found me.

I was shocked and sweating cold when I knew it.

Because my heart was so weak, being tortured, having poor immunity, cold infection, myocarditis, all was attacking at one time.

In ordered to guarantee I would not get worse, really turned into heart failure, doctor gave me with hormones shot, of course, under unknown situation, I gained my fat again alike balloon, when I woke up.

Still good, not gained much, but it was enough to make my effort in vain for my diet.

This was called as sinister, I could live again.

I really got my lesson, after ten years later, I have remembered it deeply in my memory.

Diet must stop before going too far, otherwise it would harm the health.

Go die to self-pity, does self-pity is more important compare to life?

Finally I still able to climb out from death!

My problem...

Kang Yu!!

Even I have climbed out from death, furthermore I pretended to be ostrich.

How could I face him?

Chapter 17 (17.1)

Chapter 17

Part 1 (One)

He must be an Alien

I have stayed few days in hospital, when I was hospitalized on the first day, Kang Yu came.

He must come, if he didn't come, I would give up on him.

But if he comes, I not dared to meet him.

When he came, I was sitting in my patience bed eating apple while reading manhwa, suddenly Yan Yan took him inside the patience room.

“Sis, Kang Yu comes to see you!”

I was shocked almost falling down from my bed, my first reaction was throwing my half-eaten apple and also my manhwa, covered myself with quilt, lying deathly in my bed.

“Sleep, I sleep!” I closed my eyes.

Yan Yan not even took my hint, she not even has feeling to help me, “Kang Yu, both of you slowly chatting, my mother went back to home, taking new clothes for my sister, just went out, she won't back for moment, but, in order to be safe, it better for me to guard outside,”

Although that day I was shouting to break up with Kang Yu if he meets me, but it was happened at my house, my mother and father not even heard it so he must be not knew it!

My luck!

I could hear my heart pounding said, don't go, stay and accompany me, I don't want to face him by myself.

I stayed in two bed patience room, the old grandma was doing her check up, didn't know when she would come back, she went out and only left me alone, I... I ... I afraid!

I still closed my eyes, kept on sleeping!

Yan Yan closed the door, I could feel that Kang Yu standing beside my bed, there was time ear could replace eyes, at moment my ear became super sensitive, he was taking out something and put to the table near the bed, I smelled banana fragrant, and then, he pulled the chair and sat beside the bed.

I could feel his breathing, it means his distant quite close to me, I still wrapped myself with quilt, I shrink myself and almost fell down until I covered my face.

When I felt nothing, I dared to gasp my breath.

Kang Yu didn't say anything, so I really didn't know what to do.

Speaking ah, why are you not speaking, speaking ah, how suppose I speak?

Five minutes later, I unwrapped myself, I felt difficult to breath.

Cannot bear anymore, I have reached my limit.

Unwrapped my quilt, sat down in my bed, I inhale and exhale the air.

I ... back to live... back to live...

But when I was glancing at Kang Yu...

I was shocked!

He looked so fierce as if grin face of Tibetan Mastiff.

I was stunned by him, chocked, then I slowly to open my eyes, said "You... why are you here?"

Kang Yu glared at me, "I have been here for a while."

I coughed, "Oh... why are... you not speak?"

"There is someone who wrapped herself in guilt, pretended to sleep, what I say must not be heard, right?" He gave me cold answered.

I was glared by him, a moment I have cold sweat.

"Why didn't you unwrapped my guilt, you almost make me alike pig head inside!" I softly said to him.

I heard what he said to me, "When there is no air anymore, later or sooner you will climb out, why must I make a move?"

I was sweating lots.

He really black belly!

I was playing the quilt using my fingers, and then looked down, looked down until my head touched my chest.

"I give you time to confess!" he sat by cross his legs, as if he is Da Ye (Lord/Big Master) looking at me.

He clearly knew my fault.

Suddenly realized every time when I get angry, at the last it always me who ask for forgiveness, but everything that happened, I also felt so wronged.

"She called me... she called me fatty, and also said... she not let me to meet you..." after said, I really felt sad, my eyes blinking for few times and my tears just dropping down and made my eyes blurry, "She pulled me to inside the classroom, spoke to many people... was she beautiful...or me was beautiful...all of them were looking at me, I felt myself alike animal in the zoo, no dignity! Xiao Fan wasn't there, you... you weren't there too... no one helped me... I was so afraid...I... self-pity!"

After I done, I wipe my tears and nose, I really felt so sad.

All the problem must blamed on Xiao Fan, I have given her money to check, but she didn't tell me about that girl, when I was still hospitalized, Xiao Fan was the first person who came to visit me.

That time I have asked her.

She answered me so easy, one sentence "Even her name Kang Yu does not know, what I should tell you?"

Well, perhaps that girl was thinking too much, she felt repulsive, took me to vent her anger.

Kang Yu sighed, stretched out his hand, he gently patting my back, helped to calm down myself.

His face expression has changed little bit. I tried to brazen myself, "I am also someone who have self-pride, I could not easily bullied by others! That time, I really wanted to give her slap, but...I not dared!"

The last was not necessary, so it directly hit on me.

"Humph, you not dare to slap her but you dare to slap me!" he touched his nose and looked pissed off.

My body stiffens, I secretly glanced at him, that day I was in mess, impulsively stretched out my hand, I didn't know whether I slapped him on right or left cheek. It has passed days, I didn't have impression about it anymore, remembered that day I slapped him quite hard, didn't know whether it caused internal injury or not.

"No need to see anymore, it was left cheek!" he angrily continuing glaring at me.

I touched my nose, "I am so sorry."

He grunted, but his hand was peeling banana.

"Is it still hurt?" I asked.

"You say?"

"Next time.. next time I will not dare again!" I really like to use this kind of old pledging.

"Next time? Will there a next time? It means there will be next time in the future, next time you are still thinking of it, or next time you want to use knife to chop me!" he started to go crazy, after he done peeling the banana, it stuffed inside my mouth, he angry and took back the banana, fiercely bite the banana.

I hurried shook my head, also my hand, "I won't, I won't use knife to chop you!"

It was too bloody, I really felt afraid.

"Okay, this time I would think as if nothing happen, continue!" he ate the banana, and peeling other one, but not giving me, he ate by himself.

Really too much, he obviously knows that I like banana so much.

I swallowed my saliva, "Continue? What to continue?"

"Say, how you could be hospitalized?" he interrogated.

I murmured, "It was... it was..."

I bet he knew the reason, it was impossible if Yan Yan didn't say anything to

him, so why must he asked me again, he wanted me to reflect on myself or because he objection with my way of dieting.

“Cut... Cut... cut fat!”

When the two words came out, he was extremely angry.

“I want to be beautiful, but who knows...” I really not happy, I wanted to find excuses, but seeing how his expression turned black, hurried I pledged for forgiveness, “I know that I was wrong, I won’t do it, won’t do it anymore! I go die, I must not go on diet, I must not torturing myself, also makes... makes... you worry!”

I really am afraid of him.

17.2

Chapter 17

Part 2 (Two)

He must be an Alien

Kang Yu backs to his normal, looked at me, still thinking whether he must forgive me or not.

I have sat on my bed, looking at him directly.

I really understood that I done wrong.

Not long after that, he peeled a banana for me, "Eat."

My eyes twinkling... this mean... this means he has forgiven me already.

"Not angry anymore?" I asked him softly.

"Eat your banana!" suddenly he glared at me, but this expression much better compare to just now.

I am happily eating my banana.

Really sweet and taste good!

After I done eating, hesitated I wanted to eat one more, "I still want!"

Kang Yu peeled another one, gave me, I ate, looked at him, I realized his hand on bedside, propped his head and looked at me.

That kind of eyes sight... I paused for moment and blushed.

Why must he look at me with that kind of eyesight as if looking at his treasure?

I avoid looking at him, quickly to eat my banana.

He does not know how good looking himself, he looked alike male lead in manhwa, which able makes me to have nosebleed.

"Miao Miao..." he used very gentle voice tone.

"En?" His voice nice and tickling my ears, as if something that scratching me.

"Don't diet anymore!"

"I know! I won't!" I really don't want him to get angry.

"I like woman with big breast!"

"....."

When I discharged from hospital, I really obediently eating and sleeping, and then continuing to be fat, could not do anything about it, now if I ate little, my father and mother would be panic and sweating heavily, because they afraid I might have another idea to lose weight.

I not dare, if it wasn't because I have got my lesson, I would not dare to think for dieting again.

Hence, I really live alike pig.

At one blink winter holiday has passed for half, the spring coming, two big things were happened.

The first one, my family private house was acquire by the government--demolished, we must move to high storey apartment house, my father because he wanted to move in time during the spring, immediately asked our relatives to help moving all the furniture to new house.

I just recovered from my sickness, my father and mother are loved me so much, during moving to the new house, they didn't allowed me to do anything, Yan Yan was the one suffering not only cleaning her own new room she also cleaned my new room, she shouting all the day and exhausted.

Since there was not my business, I was so boring but happy too, I was secretly going to Kang Yu's house.

New year eve, 30 that day, finally we moved to our new house, because we were hurried moving to new house, my mother didn't buy vegetable, so that we ate whatever there were, a family gathered and watching new year show, snacking and eating instant noodle, just like that, before ten o'clock, my father and mother also Yan Yan who were exhausting, all of them had slept earlier.

On contrary, I fully awake, took the opportunity during all of them sleeping, I secretly hide myself inside my room and called Kang Yu using phone, prepare to say happy new year.

When clock showed 00, I looked out through my window, “Star Wars” firecrackers, fireworks filled outside sky, deafening ears, it was so loud which made me and Kang Yu hung the phone call, it also made my father, mother and Yan Yan awake.

Hence, all of us as one family went down stairs to join “Star Wars”, together to make noise, welcomed year 1997.

Our new year passed on that way.

The second thing was, due to National Games on October 1997 held in Shanghai, after the spring, the Shanghai Government issued “participating letter” to more than dozens high school students to participate the Eight National Games opening ceremony performances group. Pitied us as the high school students, our treasures holiday had taken, be treated as cheap/low-cost labor and began to have eight-month long rehearsal gymnastics performances.

Since it was large scale opening ceremony performances, naturally there were many colorful clothing, until today I still remembered, those performances clothes were piercing into eyes, the upper clothes were tight and the lower clothes were lower and showing bell-bottoms, the color was frightening people, there was school used gaudy blue, orange, red rose color, while Shi San Nv Girl’s high school was using frog green color, really alike frog when dressed, even those beautiful girls were looked alike frog after they dressed, and then our hands held one green and red pom pom, grouped as one group until the last day the audience also could see the people in groups but only the pattern stands.

I was having body shape problem, could not wear any clothes so I did not participate in rehearsal so I was put in logistic group.

Fortunately I was put into Logistic group so I didn’t wear and dance with that frog clothes, my face was not thick.

Amitabha! Long Live Fatty!

Yan Yan school didn’t get the notice, so that her was school not participate, because of it, she was unhappy.

All the male students from the participated school were taking part in dragon claws performances, not to mention the color, it was terrified ugly, their clothes

also tight ones, it reminded me with high school students who were participating Jiang Wan sports practice, but when Kang Yu wore that clothes, appeared in front of me, simply to say he looked alike vixen (人 ren 妖 Yao : litteraly mean ladyboy or transexual, but in here I used Vixen)

But, his lower part, was too... tight too...

17. 3

Chapter 17

Part 3 (Three)

He must be an Alien

At that moment, I felt I would get nosebleed.

Be sinister!

Later I became accustom to see him, but my little world not peaceful, as long there was girl who got closer to Kang Yu, a pair of my eyes coldly glared them.

The eight-month long rehearsal has became our best game time, every time we went to Jiang Wan practicing place, we always have lot of time for doing nothing, waiting and day dreaming, hence, when we were at school we were quickly to finish our homework, when rehearsal break, we were spending time to play cards.

The performances props—— that piece of red and green rounded board became the table to play cards, for the first and elite class students this meant their extra time to do their homework and used the board as their desk.

I, Xiao Fan, Da Shuang, Liu Li Jun, Kang Yu, Xu Ying, of course all of us were there, however she was using the board as her study desk but unfortunately for the others four just suitable to playing card. Not really bothered with her.

Didn't know whether it was our bad luck or not, few teachers who responsible for us were abnormal, they were extremely strict, once they called us to make line we must arrived immediately, once we late, we would ask to get out from line, in the most eye-catching practice place, who was willingly, everyone did not want to take advantage of the crisis for personal gain, so that no one dared to come late, once being called to make line, everyone immediately running to line up.

It similar with playing cards, once we heard about rehearsal, we would immediately stopped, our hand put down all the cards, running and made line up, the card that lost must be responsible by me, the logistics staff.

Once the rehearsal ended, all of us back to play again.

Well, when rehearsal if get used then it okay, but the trouble was getting in toilet.

There were lot of people, especially the ladies toilet, once break time, it has fully filled by people, even there was no place to slip.

There was one time, Liu Li Jun wanted to have “Big Number”(poop), all the toilet were occupied, still made long queue, she was holding back her legs like twisting, standing and then I teased her: “You just back from toilet just now, why didn’t you solve the matter together!”

Still hold back herself, “just now I haven’t had feeling to do it!”

Xiao Fan helped her to queue in toilet, turned and said, “This is called as passing this village then no store anymore, so do you understand the meaning.”

“In this time speaking about this is no use anymore. This is something that out from my control!”

I brazen to give my idea, “Do you want to go to male’s toilet, let Kang Yu to help you!”

“Go to hell, if you want to go then you go!” Liu Li Jun glared at me.

I stick out my tongue, to think, well, you slowly waiting in here and if you cannot hold just don’t blame me.

Waiting for few minutes, the person who inside the toilet not yet came out, does she also have Big Number?

Really have bad luck.

Holding too long, even when there were desire to let it go, it could be turned to have no desire anymore.

At last, Liu Li Jun didn’t have mood to do Big Number or perhaps she could not.

When out from the toilet, Liu Li Jun angrily said, “You say what is the difference between Big Number and Small Number (Pee), doesn’t it also waste, why must take long time?”

Xiao Fan and I speechless, she cannot do her Big Number and now she tried to study it.

Da Shuang was waiting in front of the toilet, when she heard, suddenly she laughing.

“One is solid and other one is liquid.”

What kind of people ah! Both of them were really studied about it, the solid and the liquid?

I really didn't know whether to laugh or cried, better to laugh.

Kang Yu was sitting in near the cards board, watching the place, when he spotted us came back, asked “done?”

I shook my head, “Too many people, she has lost her mood!”

Kang Yu frowned, not say anything, sat down, starting to shuffle the cards, prepare one round.

Liu Li Jun still nagging, “What is the difference? Both of it was came and started from stomach, why one takes longer time than others.’

Kang Yu asked me, “What happen?”

“Venting anger, hysteria, perhaps because hoards too many poisons, so she starting to study about the difference between Big Number and Small Number!”

There is time I really admire Liu Li Jun, she dares to speak anything she even not care Kang Yu is man.

Suddenly, she pissed off, slapped the board, looking at Kang Yu, said “You say, what is the different the big and the small ones.”

I could feel three lines in my head =.=”

Big sister, don't think too much, many people here, cannot make toilet as your excuses.

I thought Kang Yu must be seen her as crazy.

When Kang Yu is spreading the cards, he spoke surely: “Both of them are siblings, but the little (pee) is loyal, the big (poop) cannot always accompany the small, but every times the big going out, the little ones will follow at back!”

After he said, everyone was silent.

Kang Yu frowned: “What? Did I say wrong?”

We were shaking our head.

Able to think to that point, Kang Yu isn’t human, but he perhaps an alien.

Even this kind of thing he could explain, and even to have further discussion about it.

What idea!

Xiao Fan, Da Shuang, Liu Li Jun looked at me, all of them pitying me, as if said, Miao Miao, your IQ and his are far, in the future you will be so pity!

Still need to say, I have known it before, I am not match for Kang Yu.

Very soon, again it was confirmed that he has high IQ.

We have played few rounds, suddenly I felt urgency, I rushed to toilet but there still many people, I anxious and twisting my leg.

I was standing in front of the toilet, waiting.

Suddenly, I heard Kang Yu shouted, “Get in line!”

After he said, I saw everyone were went out from lady’s toilet in rush, one by one the toilet door was opened, many of them were rushing out while tidied their pants.

At one blinked the toilet empty.

I was standing outside the door, open-wide my mouth looked at Kang Yu who standing outside.

He leisurely leaning his body on the wall, looking at me, “what are you waiting for, faster get inside!”

Uh...

I was surprised so that I had difficulty to pee...

He must really an alien.

Must be!

Chapter 18 (18.1)



Chapter 18

Part 1 (One)

First kiss gone

At the blink of eyes, 8 months had gone, the youth like us, groups of high school student were completed and succeeded the perfect opening ceremony of the eight National Games Gymnastics performances, thus, all of us not only lost our high moment during summer, after a week for N times weekend, we also makeup for all the lesson that we failed.

Grievance, this terrible grievance!

At the same time, I was promoted to second year senior high school, welcoming the headache for student credits (School grade).

Head... really was aching.

Hence, my math scores devastating declined.

But on contrary with Kang Yu height, within 8 months, he seems as if eating height powder, he has reached 185cm, he taller by one head from me, I must lift up my head to look at him, from 30 degrees to 45 degrees, and now changed to 60 degrees, and the increasing trend kept continuing.

I had enough, my neck also felt enough.

“Don’t you have problem with your head and height?” I could not resist asked.

“My mom said that my father very tall, I resemble him.”

Usually, Kang Yu pick and drop me to school, but this time I was sitting on thick bar in front of driver seat. The back seat was too high, and also scraped, so we cherish and take advantage of our Friday, went home little bit late, Kang Yu brought me to strolling exclusive store to change new seat.

Due to his height, the seat must set higher, so during the traffic he definitely stood out.

“Really envy, I don’t even grow taller!” I dissatisfied pouting my mouth.

Kang Yu lowered his head, his eyesight fell into my chest area, and then he

said, "It grows!"

"Grow? With what eyes are you use to see that I am growing, said, just now where you gazed?"

"Miao Miao, I grow taller while your chest grow plumper, both of us are normal." He answered me so normal.

At sudden my face blushed red alike monkey butt, "Kang Yu!" I stretched out both of my hand and pinched his cheek, "You are shameless!"

I forgot that both of us were still in the street, being touched by me, Kang Yu perhaps felt little bit pain and could not ride the bike properly, fortunately the street is flat, we were staggered few times and then the bike steady again.

I was not dare to touch him anymore, being traffic in street, fell down it really not a joke, I angry and turned away and ignored him.

8 months of the eight National Games opening ceremony, the rehearsal has ended, although I was in logistics sections, I did busy too, my waist got smaller by one number but my cup increased by one size....

How couldn't changes?

The answer was...I need to change my pant smaller one number but my bra also need to change bigger by one number.

TNND!

I felt that I have lost weight for pounds!

I not only suspected Kang Yu opinions but also began to doubt myself.

Kang Yu bend his body little bit, he used his voice that caused me to have itchy feeling, "Miao Miao?"

"I am angry, if there is words quickly speak out!" I felt itchy in my ears, why he likes to speak with this kind of voice to me. It makes my ears so itchy and also my heart.

He sighed, "I want to say, you should grow in moderate, or else, I can feel worse than nosebleed."

"You... still dare to speak!" I got so emotionally, hurried raised my head, by

coincide hit into his nose.

He braked the bike, the bike suddenly stopped, he really no need to hold back, he really nosebleed.

I hurried to take out my handkerchief to stop his bleed, his nose not lightly hit by me, depressed, ached, grieved, grieved until tears XX

“How can you just mention about nosebleed and now you really nosebleed!”

“Have too much stock, rather than head smashed by you better let it flows, this much better!” he inhale.

“You still have time to joke! Quickly face your head up!” I use my handkerchief to stop his nosebleed.

“It is alright, later will be okay!” his head up.

He looked so funny I could not help myself not to laugh at him.

Kang Yu face dark, perhaps he thought I might heartless. I was the person who hit him and also the person who laughing at him.

After while, his nosebleed stopped.

He continued to pedaling his bike to the Exclusive store, at this moment, I didn't have heart to anger him, but more I thought more I wanted to laugh, my mood turned to be so good. But secretly took glance to his nose.

He knew that I looked happy. He did not disrupt my happiness. Intimacy he spoke in my ear about many interesting things that happened in the school today.

Both of us are wearing school uniform, riding and share the bicycle, this kind of intimacy, if this place not little bit quiet, I really don't have gut and not dare to be this such bold. Because it is Saturday everyone busy to hurry go home no one really pay attention to us so I don't feel awkward.

I see we are almost arrived at Jian Guo West District, suddenly both of us heard serine sounds at our back.

“The bike which is in front, both of you is sticking too close, separate!”

Kang Yu and I stunned, both of us take look to back.

It is police car which following at our back, the police uncle is shameless and even using mic, shouting at us.

“Study well and get progress every day!” the car roof speaker made his words louder.

Once he shouted, everyone in the street, no matter those who ride bike, driving car, or the passenger who walking in the street, all of them are looking at us. At sudden both Kang Yu and me became focus attention.

People are pointing and talking about us, some even shaking their head or sighed heavily and some are waiting for good show.

Shortly to say, this is really too much.

I was shocked so I hide and move closer to Kang Yu’s chest.

Suddenly, Kang Yu turned and talked to the police man, “すみません, 警官のおじさん, 何を言います?”

(I am sorry, Mr. Policeman, what are you saying?)

I was dumfounded, the police uncle dumbstruck, the people who in the street also dumbstruck.

Everyone is silent.

Kang Yu still looked so composed but at same time he showed doubt expression.

“Noise for half day so that Japanese!” someone said.

“Oh, what noise, so they are foreigner, let’s go, this policeman is eat too full does not have anything to do (busy-doing)”

“The Japanese teenager are dating, nothing to do with us!”

“The Japanese even married when they are only 16!”

“The Japanese is mature! This kind of teaching really is no good.”

“Little brats are not good thing, let’s go!”

Everyone is discussing about us, this Japanese and that Japanese and slowly they dismissed.

The police uncle is blinking his eyes, his hand still holding the mic, but does not know what to say, dumbfounded for sometimes, at last he let us go, he driving away his car from Kang Yu's bike.

"Let's go Miao Miao!" when everyone is dismissed, he turned back.

I still dumbfounded!

18.2



Chapter 18

Part 2 (Two)

First kiss gone

“Kang Yu, how can you know to speak Japanese?” I am heavy fan of Japanese Manhwa and also anime, moreover, the Dong Bei (Northeast) people are hate Japanese, but I still understand little bit for simple sentences.

Kang Yu said, I am sorry, Mr.policeman, what are you saying?

“I only know little bit, recently Uncle Shen is studying Japanese, he said that he wanted to participate in Linguistic Activity, everyday he is practicing with me, I hear few times and get used and then learn it little bit.

Okay, I understood now.

“So why did you talk in Japanese?” this is the most important.

Kang Yu frowned, he talked as if it is normal, “All of the accusation must be carried by the Japanese!”

I am sweating...

Kang Yu not only grow higher but also grow facial hair*, perhaps it was his time to grow facial hair, but it just recently growing facial hair, but little bit too thick and little bit harsh. So it makes him felt little bit uncomfortable. His skin actually quite smooth, when he grows the facial hair, he felt itchy and like to scratch it. At last he really looked like Monkey.

**facial hair = mustache + beard*

Helplessly, he wanted to shave it.

Uncle Shen persuaded him, “Don’t shave it, let it grows, this time still cannot shave it, if you shave it will be more harsh and rough, you won’t want to become bear right, make your girl runaway.”

I was at beside — smiling.

Kang Yu glared at me, he also complained to Uncle Shen, “But it unbearable.”

“What you cannot endure it, we are man, grow facial hair it natural thing, just endure it. Just don’t say that I didn’t remind you when your girl running away, you won’t able to catch her back later!” Uncle Shen took the razor from Kang Yu’s hand, suddenly he glanced at me and then he looked at Kang Yu and frowned, “Besides, you see your girl, white and delicate, if the beard become harsh don’t you afraid to scrape her.”

What...what did he mean?

What is the relation between his facial hairs grow rough with me?

Kang Yu rubbing his facial hair in his chin, his eyes looking at me, he looks like to have deep thought for while and then sighed and said: “Alright, I endure it.”

“This is right thing!” Uncle Shen is patting Kang Yu’s shoulder.

Suddenly I realized their conversation sound alike amidst the cloud and mist (puzzled).

“I will give you some of Hamamelis (Chinese witch hazel flower) water, apply it perhaps will be better little bit after while.” Said Uncle Shen who as the experience person.

“Oh!” Kang Yu replied him.

Uncle Shen kept the razor, prepare to going out, “I go out to dance, both of you play!” after he stood in front of the door, he turned around glancing at me and looked at Kang Yu direction, as if it like warning he exclaimed, “Don’t play fire!”

Why have I always sensed Uncle Shen talked has hidden meaning?

“Fine, Aunty Zhang is already waiting for you, you are the one who mustn’t play fire!”

Uncle Shen is nagging, “You smelly boy!”

After said, he left.

After he left, I could not help myself to ask, “What riddle are both of you saying? It looks so mysterious!”

Kang Yu caresses his facial hair under his chin, perhaps he felt uncomfortable,

after I see it, I also can't help myself, touch it, I never thought that it quite nice touching by hand, although it little bit rough but it feels as if touching little tooth brush, I really like to touch it.

Kang Yu hand stopped, he let me to continue caressing his chin, seems that he enjoyed it so much alike cat, "Want to know?"

I nodded my head. In my mind I thought this facial hair is much comfortable and nicer compare to Cai Xi's fur.

I keeps on caressing it, keeps on touching it...

His eyes flashed brightly, "That... you lean closer, I secretly tell you!"

"What? Still need to secretly say!" I didn't suspect him my face was leaning closer to him.

"Get closer little bit! The distant is too short!" I could feel his facial hair but not notice his shining and bright eyes.

So I tiptoe my feet, make myself taller little bit and looked excited alike hearing gossip, "Said la, quickly say!"

When my face is facing up, when I am not notice, Kang Yu has already pressed my back, very fast he has already kissed me.

When I realized it, his lips have already touched my lips, immediately I felt myself as if hot-burning boiling water.

After he kissed, Kang Yu has already wiped his mouth by licking his lips, "Uh... alright, I have told you!"

I open wide my eyes and glared at him, my mind felt empty.

"How? Did I scrape you?" he used his finger to point at my lips skin area.

Suddenly my mind appeared numerous digital numbers, even numerous fonts.

"Did you hurt, didn't it?" Kang Yu saw me stayed quiet, he looked frustrated touching his own facial hair.

Finally I gained myself, trembling and stammered, "You... You kissed...me... this... this is my first kiss!"

And then... and then it was me who sent it to him.

His eyes rolling around, “I know!”

“You knew but still kissed!” I pissed off.

“Why? If it wasn’t me, who you expect to kiss?” he looked at me as if I am dummies.

I am speechless.

That is right, I also didn’t know for whom I kept for.

Thinking for while, it was wrong, no one kissing like that, no matter what, it was still my first kiss.

My first kiss ah!

Too not romantic, that... that...

I was surprised, I didn’t even know what it feel?

My face blushed, my heart pounding and also not satisfied.

“You kissing technique too bad!” finally I got the reason to retort.

I thought Kang Yu might go crazy after heard it, but who knows he smiles happily.

“Actually it feels good! Would...” His eyes flashing, he enticed me, “Let’s try it again!”

My face burn hot but my heart really willingly.

We have dating almost three years, if in Manhwa, the male and female leads have kissed within three days, so that we are considered slow.

So... so... kiss? Or not kiss?

Girls must have aloof character.

I glanced at Kang Yu to see his expression, why he looked that excited?

“Miao Miao, I have prepared, this time I will be careful and not scratch on you!”

It is not the matter of facial hair, okay!

The important is...Kang Yu, Kissed me, you are playing shady.

Too TM too black!

This thing, I really hard to swallow, “why you are not even asked me the problem, just kissed me, this thing, you must ask me before!”

“Understood!” he nodded, reckon for while, and then he said: “Okay, Miao Miao, I want to kiss you!”

I really never thought that he suddenly said this. I really dumbfounded being dragged by him and also made him succeed once again.

“You...” I got kissed once again by him, I pissed off and my hand shaking, I haven’t said whether I willing or not, he has already kissed me.

He looked innocently say to me, “It was you who told me to ask, after that kissed!”

He really is not shameless by twisting my words.

“Alright, don’t be angry anymore, the kiss has happened! At worst you kissed me one more time as makeup!” he really kissed me as if eating and testing me, seeing me dumbfounded, he kissed me once again.

“This time must be satisfied! If satisfied it is good. Come and sit obediently, I will get soda for you!” he patted my head, as if he just tasted honey, he humming happily and walking enthusiastically toward kitchen.

I am so speechless asking to heaven!

Again, this time really proofing I am not his match.

I am suffering crushing defeat!

My first kiss, only by this... it gone!

Chapter 19 (19.1)

Chapter 19

Part 1 (One)

Ice Cream and Roasted Pigeon

“Miao Miao, I want to kiss you!”

During this recent months, it is the most word that Kang Yu loves to tell me, as long as no one in little flower yard, no one in grove, in cinema, or even in Uncle Shen’s house, he would say, this simple thing.

To unknown whether he really born with kissing talent or men really have good progressing in this aspect, his kissing technique progressed too fast!

He is licking lips...

Overwhelming!

During this era, we only dare to kiss mouth. It has made heart feel content and actually he... hasn’t had that gut!

Being overwhelming just overwhelming, this is too often and no refreshing feeling to be honest.

Hence, Kang Yu scheme me again.

He said, “Miao Miao, we kissing with longer time, let see whether we can hold to few minutes!”

My little heart is thumping, peng peng... is it impossible that if this time succeed and then he would like to play and try French kiss.

Would this good?

This kind of kiss, it is easy to get into troubled!

I haven’t grown as adult, I really could not go one step further.

I really think seriously, Kang Yu “Experience so splendid” and monopolized me, he hold my back of head and kissed me again.

He asked but never needed my answered.

Huhuhuhu....

At first time, I really could not do it, not long after that, I felt my lung would be exploded.

Seeing him so enjoyed, there is no hint that he will stop.

"Uh... uh..." I panic and waving my hand.

Run out of oxygen!

Kang Yu felt and knew, but he reluctantly to part away from me, his eyes looked dim, it seems that he is not happy.

I hurried inhale the air, takes deep breathe... takes deep breathe...

He pissed off and complained, "Miao Miao, you are really not working hard! I have told you to exercise daily, so that your lung could be stronger, but you just not listening to me!"

I looked so pity, looking at him... why it only kissing, but he even can scold me not work hard.

So far, Kang Yu taught, "Everyday practices so that it can be progressed" he hinted his words, forcing me get special practice.

I pitied my lips, it has been working so hard!

The overwhelming feeling until crying...

To be honest, we have kissed for many times, every times Kang Yu kiss me it would leave taste, I really wanted to know his thought, I have been forced to kiss until my lips sore, at least he gives me a boil of sweet soup to drink.

Waiting until he done, I can't endure anymore, "what my taste!"

I remembered the Manhwa that I read, the male lead always say you taste this sweet or that sweet to the female lead after they done kissing, I really want to know how Kang Yu thinks about it, I want to feel the romance.

Kang Yu frowned and thought for while, answered, "The taste of human flesh!"

Immediately I punched him, "You... can't you say something nice, alike I taste alike ice cream, sweets, or although you said you tasted alike stinky tofu that you liked, I will admit it!"

Stinky tofu is smells unpleasant, but when eat it tastes good.

This man really not romantic!

“I won’t let you to kiss me again!” My face showed sulky alike grumpy frog.

“Ice cream!” Kang Yu has deep thought, his eyes gleaming brightly, “Miao Miao, you wait me for moment!”

I looked at him who has already running so fast from grove, strangely. This is one of Uncle Shen houses that have piece of green land, the trees are grow dense, normally others than pest the garden or weeding no one comes here. This is also our secret place.

After one minutes, he came back, he brought me Cornetto (Ice cream brand).

I dumbfounded looking at him, he knows I angry so that he bought me that to apologize, coaxing me to happy?

“Eat it!” he removed the wrapping paper and handed it to me.

“Consider you as sensitive!” I am happily taking the Cornetto.

Although it is winter and eating ice cream is little bit cold, but since it is bought by him for me, there is no reason for me not to eat it. I eat it little bit by little bit that Cornetto until left nothing.

“Done?” Kang Yu came closer to me.

I wiped my mouth, “Next time you buy me the strawberry flavor, the chocolate is too sweet!”

Kang Yu nodding, “Well... Miao Miao, I kiss you!”

“I won’t let you...” I haven’t said kiss but he has already kissed me, I was forced be kissed.

After kissing, he answered me so seriously, “I will re-answer the before question, Miao Miao... the kiss tasted ice cream!”

“.....”

19.2



Chapter 19

Part 2 (Two)

Ice Cream and Roasted Pigeon

Ou Yang Miao Miao, once again it would be better for you to admit defeat, he really not your match. Forever...forever... forever... you are not!

Again, overwhelming until tear-ing...

**

After this month, Christmas is coming.

On the Christmas eve Uncle Shen gave Kang Yu two tickets to watch magic show, one of the tickets is mine.

Seeing the poster, it written, the magician is coming from Japan, as rumor said he is one of the best Magician performer from Japan, during this time, David Copperfield is one of the foreign stars, the performance is fresh and as additional the effect of advertising makes the tickets sold well, it also expensive.

Uncle Shen got these tickets from participating the Linguistic events, his Japanese friend gave him, he didn't interest with it so gave it to Kang Yu, while me, thought it as get the benefit from him.

The show would take place in Hong Kou Stadium, in order to join 7 PM show, Kang Yu and I have ate dinner at 4PM, we went earlier because we must took three times bus, we must go out earlier, afraid missed the show.

At the beginning Kang Yu unwillingly, he hates Japanese, but because I begging him, finally he and I standing in front of Hong Kou Stadium.

Shanghai's people like crowded, foreigner performances, no matter famous or not, everyone like to make groups and crowd place, as long as eyes sees there are human packed, vast crowd, we need to line at least 30 minutes before we can get in.

Looking place to sit, this Japanese fellow turned be someone who generous to give us one of the best seat place. The tickets cost 380 Yuan.

Kang Yu and I sit down, slowly to wait until the show start, seeing right and left, the time of show is getting nearer, but the magician hasn't showed up.

Not long after, the MC appeared to explain. It seems that something coming up so the Show will be late, the show itself paused for half hour.

When heard it, Kang Yu's face looked so black as if people borrowed thousand and million Yuan from him.

I tried to appease, said, "Peaceful world! Peaceful world!"

Kang Yu humph, he said, "If not peaceful, they dare coming to China to earn money?"

"Alright, I know you love China the most, but art is boundless, I really want to spend Christmas with you, don't show this kind of expression, come, smile!" I like prostitute that seducing him by touching his chin.

"Is it not good staying at home?" he grabbed my hand, bite it.

I feel little bit pain, answered him, "The tickets are so expensive, and it would be waste if we are not coming!"

"Who said it will waste, I can sell it!"

"....."

Big brother, these tickets are given by others, you even dare to think it sell and earn money.

So black, too black!

I am so speechless, turned— crying.

The MC said it will take half hour, and ended longer half hour, even if like this, the single ticket is already sold out, people are already get inside, complained.

Not to mention about the performance attraction, there is time I really admire with the Japanese's brain, there are lots of the Japanese performer with countless shows, but also they never left their uniqueness, moreover they do new and odd, I watched until my palm hurt because kept on clapping, stunned with the performance and also think it worth seeing, but... I feel hungry.

Kang Yu and I have ate our dinner at 4 PM, besides we were hurried coming

here, the food were already digested, moreover the performance had delayed for half hour, now super hungry.

I glanced at Kang Yu, I realized he touching his stomach, this is signed that he is hungry, normally he eats two bowls of rice, but today because we are rushing, he only ate one bowl and already dragged by me to come here. It is strange if he is not hungry.

When arrived at the Stadium, we wanted to buy some snacks but because we saw there were so many people line up, we gave up and now really regretful.

The performance duration is about 3 hours, now it has started half, glanced at Kang Yu, his face really terrible ugly. I really understand him very well. He is someone who cannot endure hunger, my prediction he has already super hungry.

But now where to buy snacks? The door has closed when the show started.

I greeted my teeth, endure, enduring until finish.

The performance almost reach the end, in order to show their apologized, this Japanese magician wanted to perform two special performances, one of the performance is the recently he created, there is still no one ever showed it before, all of us can be counted as the first audience who watch this two special performances, once he said, all the audience have high expectation, the clapping sound is so loud.

After the first performance ended, I hooked with the performance, I really feel so curious, at moment I forget about my hunger.

He started the second performance by continuing the first one, he asked one of the audience to participate and stand up in stage, there are many people applause included me, I give applause while glancing at Kang Yu and helped him to applause, I just expected to have more supporter, my purpose is clear.

The magician is walking in circle, when he came near at my place he excited to lift his hand higher.

I thought he glanced at me but who knows that he directly invited Kang Yu.

Uh...

He didn't choose me perhaps I not suitable to be seen by the audience.

Kang Yu acted as if he didn't know, he ignored the magician.

I pushed him, "Get in stage la, it not easy to have this chance, go la, and don't make Chinese shame! They perhaps thought you do not have gut!"

Perhaps Kang Yu feel same way, regarding this moment, cannot make the ancestors ashamed, stood up, confidently and at ease go to the stage.

The audience are so excited keep on giving applause, I feel little bit worry inside my heart.

I saw the magician assistant communicate with the magician and also Kang Yu, does not know what they are talking, Kang Yu nodded his head.

I relieved, I afraid he will mess up people's show.

The magician performance is asking Kang Yu to stay still, not moved, the magician gives tall head to Kang Yu, asking him to wear it, and then he asked him to stand anywhere in the stage.

The magician will make distant about five meters from him, free four pigeons, gave the hat to him, because the pigeons are living creature, so that pigeons would fly out from the hat.

Although there is no significant changes, asking the person to wear the hat, stay long distant, but this living creature really flying out from the hat, really interesting.

Kang Yu was the one being choose, the assistant gave him the hat, asking him to check for few times, he had checked it, inside and outside, if they allowed him to use scissor to cut, perhaps he would cut it, seeing whether there is something fishy or no.

But the magician won't let him to find out the secret, Kang Yu can't find it. His expression not good when wearing the hat, and then he stood at one random spot of the stage, the light suddenly dim, the magician wand is moving in stage, looked so gorgeous and also chic, all people stared at that wand.

The music suddenly played in climax, the light focus on Kang Yu.

Deng! Deng! Deng!

The hat that wore by Kang Yu suddenly moving, non-stop, after the hat took off, four live pigeons flying out, flying in circle in the stage and stopped at magician's shoulder.

Stunned! Once again the applaud echoing.

I also followed to clapping my hands.

So mysterious, how could they do it? I stunned for moment, I must ask Kang Yu later.

The performance is ended, the MC has made the closing, when Kang Yu wanted to leave He is stopped by the MC.

"This audience, may I ask you what do you feel about just now performance? If there is something you would like to say, please share it to other audience."

What feeling!

He has showed such ugly expression until now, he not even showed he pleasant with the show and now asking him.

I was sweating lots in audience seat, he is someone who anti-Japanese, he might proclaimed his patriotism toward Chinese.

Kang Yu furrowed, "I feel something!"

The MC is happy, "Let share it!" he handed over Kang Yu microphone.

Kang Yu took the microphone; he turned and looked at the Magician with smiled, "If you can make trick with living pigeons, can you make it becomes roasted pigeons to let me see!"

The MC stiffened, the audience also stiffened, the magician does not understand Chinese so he smiled...

I bitterly turned over...

Even when he is hungry he not even forgets to prank other.

He has been black to some kind of unreachable level boundary.

Chapter 20 (20.1)



Chapter 20

Part 1 (One)

Present should not randomly send.

In 1997, Kang Yu and I smoothly promoted to third year senior high, everything was evil for me in third year and that was also the most torturing year for me. In order to make me and Yan Yan studied in university, my mother and my father used all the ways. It was not only private tutoring but also home-tutor which made me busy and jumble. The cruelest thing deprived mine and Kang Yu dating time during weekend. When we were in our last semester in third year, even the time for him to pick me up and drop me from school to home had been cut because the outside private tutoring, it caused me often to make phone called midnight for him, only for listened his voice, to solve my bitterness yearning.

Looking at calendar, there still one more week, it would be April 18. It is Kang Yu birthday. Since the first day we are officially dating, every year it always me who celebrate Kang Yu's birthday, it also not exception for this year. I have racked my brain to think all the ways and make an opportunity for us to spending our time.

Fortunately, I have great helper, my comradeship little sister, good in make planning, we thought to use excused to study at Xu Ying's house, helping me and Yan Yan to escape from my father and mother eyes.

"Sis, I go to Xu Ying's house. After you done dating with Kang Yu, remember to find me at there and go home together. Don't be too happy and forget me. Be careful not to get exposed!" Yan Yan took my bag and book that I used as disguise to pretend to go for tutor-section.

"I know. I won't forget! It is you, don't go to play, I really begging Xu Ying and Da Shuang to help you study, you know yours..."

This big Missy has failed for three exams in last semester, she really thought live too long, does not want to live anymore, if not because of her, my mother and my father would not keep their eyes too strict on me.

"I know! You say too much gibberish, from we went out until now you have told me more than ten times." She waved her hands, she showed expression as if I have early menopause.

"I say this for your goodness, moreover, you also do not want to see mom get shock right?"

I have deep memory about my mother expression when she saw her report card for the last semester examination result. That time mom looked alike traffic light, got shocked and also have difficulty in breathing, since that time, straightly lying in the floor, and now I still afraid.

"Okay! Okay! Why you are nagging endless, now it is ten o'clock, doesn't you still have appointment with the Boss in prototype store, if you are not going, that airplane prototype will be bought by other people!"

Hurried I see my watch, it already ten fifteen, "All is your fault, talking with you is useless, I don't want to care anymore, I am in rushed!"

Yan Yan really didn't care, she rolled her eyes, "It is you who so noisy!"

The public bus no 57 hasn't reach to the bus stop, I was in rushed to catch, quickly to follow the bus moving, once the bus door opened, I rushed inside. Today is Saturday, so there no much people, there is also an empty seat, and I took seat near window.

It says that more we in rushed more the obstacles we face, there are lots of red light along the way, I am so anxious and almost wanted to jump out from the bus and directly used my legs to go there. It shows almost eleven less two minutes, I have rushed until run out my breathe to the prototype store that located in Jing An Temple.

The boss who looked at me as if I have respiratory problem, laughed, "Little Sister, I have helped you to keep it, see you are running with sweat all over your body, come, have a seat, I will take some drink for you!"

I took deep breathe, "I really afraid you not wait for me!"

This type of airplane prototype was spotted by me last year, but because the price was deathly expensive, my red pocket money not enough while the Boss only stocked four items. I have been pledging the Boss deathly to help me save it

for two months, give time to save up money.

The boss give me a bottle of mineral water, "That's right, this type of prototype is limited edition one, this is the last stock, if not because you are the loyal customer, I won't help you to keep it this long, to let you know that, last time there was someone who wanted to buy it double price from me!"

I panic, "Double price! But I don't have that much money, it better you sell me off!"

"I just telling you, I do business with creditability and trustworthy, I will take the items, you take look, if there is no problem, I will wrap it for you, it stills same as the first time you saw it!"

I nodded.

The Boss is wrapping the thing while asking me, "Every year you come here during this time, you are buying prototype as birthday present, actually who you intend to give?"

I really not dare to say for boyfriend, I coughed, "Give it to... my brother, cousin brother!"

"Both of you, cousin brother-sister really have good relation, you give him this expensive prototype, you really generous!"

"Generous ah! Why must I not generous, he treats me very good!"

Kang Yu really good to me!

The Boss smiled at me, he takes out that 40cm prototype airplane from the display case into the box, very careful, "See, it really keep very good. It still has oil, I guarantee you, your brother cousin must be very happy!"

20. 2

Chapter 20

Part 2 (Two)

Present should not randomly send.

I walked to the display glass and taking looked carefully, it priced 880 Yuan, no matter what I really need to check it.

The Boss talking non-stop, “This one, it can fly to sky, it is the newest miniature fighter plane prototype in our country, it was made based on 1:18 ratio. The plane body is made from alloy that mixed with metal, it has detail surface, the light, the radar, even the pipeline are made in so detail, the cockpit is bubble type, the canopy can be opened, cabin seat, it really looks so resemble, absolutely...”

“It is enough! You tell me this much I really not understand!” I lifted my head up and showed him cross sign with my hands, “I only know it really expensive!”

“Little sister, it must be worth to be expensive! This thing...” it is obviously that the boss still wanted to continued.

“Alright! I understand the principle of the expensive thing, anyway it is gift for other, just let him to observe it slowly by himself! Helped me to wrap it. I have rushed time!”

“Okay, I will do it quickly! To say why I don’t have cousin sister like you, really... envy him deathly!” The Boss covered the box, label it with transparent plastic and then cut a piece of wrapping paper, he wrapped the box very well.

I settled the payment, I took that miniature airplane prototype and carry it carefully, I walked very carefully while carrying it.

Went out from the miniature prototype store, I straightly heading to the cake shop, the price of cake not expensive, I used coupon because it was last year coupon that mom got as VIP customer, but still I need to add 50 Yuan because Kang Yu likes to eat fruit cake tart.

Everything is ready, I feel at ease. One of my hand carefully carry the prototypes and my other hand carrying the cake, I walking in street, suddenly I

feel hungry, I looked at my watch, it almost two o'clock in afternoon, no wonder I feel hungry, my eyes looking surrounding, seeing whether there is snack shop or not, suddenly I see McDonald's logo.

I swallowed my saliva, my money left 3 Yuan, taking bus need 5 cents, it means my money left 2 Yuan 5 cents.

Uh...

I take looked back and forth around and spotted Lan Zhou Ramen shop.

Lan Zhou Ramen is Lan Zhou Ramen's Ramen.

I walked heading there, I take look at the price which hanging in the wall, I shouted, "Boss give me one bowl of Ramen, no need to add beef or others!"

It only noodles with soup—— it happen priced 2 Yuan 5 cents.

Huhhhuuuuhuhhh....

**

When I arrived at Uncle Shen house, it almost four o'clock afternoon, Kang Yu just happen cooking at kitchen, I put down all my things, go in to kitchen, "Where is Uncle Shen?"

Kang Yu knows that I will come, that's why he is not surprise, turned off the stove fire, he plated the red braise pork, I can't resist myself to eat one piece, and my hand hit by him, "Wash your hand!"

I pouted my mouth, "Oh..." I haven't ate meat for one day.

The red braised pork has served in table, he just answered me, "Know that you will come, he is very considered to go out and playing mahyong with his friends!"

I wash my hand in washroom, Kang Yu continue to stir-fry green vegetable, after I done washing, I am looking for towel to wipe dry my hand, but he is faster one step than me, he has grabbed the towel and helped me.

"Have rubbed with the soap?"

"I have." I am good girl.

He helped me to wipe dry, change to another new towel, it obviously he wanted to help me dry my face, "Go and sit, I almost done with the fry-stir green

vegetable, we can start dinner!"

"I help you!" I volunteered myself, raised my hand.

He rolled his eyes, "No need. Your capability is not better than the ordinary!"

Uh...

Well, I admitted!

There was one time I had helped him to fry stir the vegetable, at last the result, kitchen was in mess, this is called as to be meddlesome.

I go out from kitchen, I wait for dinner, oh yeah, I almost forget about the present and also the cake tart, quickly I took all the things and put it in the very eye-catching spot.

Kang Yu is carrying the fry stir green vegetable to table, the first thing that he sees must be the present and the cake.

"Prototype miniature airplane and fruit cake tart!" He put down the vegetable, he sat beside me, naturally.

"Qie... can't you pretend to be surprised, every times you give me same expression!" I pouted my mouth, "Every time you give me present I really surprise!"

"That because every time I gave you present, you are not able to guess it." He added red braised pork into my bowl.

That right, every time he gives me present, I never could guess it, but it is always the one I expected.

For example: 5 bags of dog food, dog clothing for spring summer autumn winter, one every seasons, there was one time he gave me book about the world famous dog treasures.

Woah, I really love it so much!

He really understands what I my liking.

"I might so predictable, so boring!" compare to him, I really do not have any ideas.

"It alright, I really like "Your faithful unto death" character!" he gave me

another piece of meat.

Faithful to death? I glanced at him, these words seem to have hidden meaning.

I have been together with him for few years, no matter how to say, my IQ must be increased, so that I won't be bullied by him.

"Who... faithful to death, you are too confident... in the future I will not marry you... who will marry to you??!"

Marry to you, these three words, I really gathered all my courage to say it.

I feel little bit shy... I find it quite embarrassing.

"You have asked good question, you not marry me, so whom will you marry..." he put down his chopstick, fiercely looked at me, "shall we discuss it for moment!"

Discuss? His expression is clearly wanted to pull me out.

"Let's... eat!" I immediately added one pieces of red braised pork, quickly changed the topic, "You unwrapped the present!"

I try to flattering him before hand over the present.

Kang Yu calmly unwrapped his present, after he done, his expression stiffen.

I thought he must be like his present, "How? Does it awesome! Are you excited or not?"

He not even moved the miniature airplane prototype, he frowned and asked me, "How much?"

My heart beat so fast, I tried to fill my mouth with vegetable, "8...88 Yuan!"

Kang Yu narrowed his eyes, he says nothing, he took that airplane prototype, "It has 1:18 ratio, it can fly to the sky, fighter plane, the plane body is covered with alloy and metal, the detail is exactly similar with the real one, the canard and the tail can be adjusted the direction, the missile can be plug and adopt synthetic resin from many surface, furthermore it can disassembly, added gear, the cabin can be opened, the gear also can be freely retractable with the landing gear, the front and rear wheels can roll, it also have damping effect, retractable jet tail and expansion the port, the stainless steel stent. The height can be freely

set, the aircraft can rotated 360 degrees, to reduced it speed it has parasol that made in very detail...Miao Miao, 88 Yuan, why don't you buy another one for me, one for me to play with and another to be my collection!"

Ah! I almost get chocked, "Ugh... this one... this one... it is the last stock, no... no stock anymore!"

20.3

Chapter 20

Part 3 (Three)

Present should not randomly send.

Kang Yu narrowed his eyes more precisely, "Where do you buy it, if you have time, bring me with you, I wanted to see... how the dummy look alike!"

"Dummy?" I dumbfounded.

"Yes ah, the dummy, I want to meet that dummy who is doing deficit business ah!" suddenly his eyes open-wide, his eye from staring the airplane suddenly glared at me.

I secretly lower my head, I know I have been exposed!

"You like it, last year when we went to Xu Hui district, you kept on looking at the display glasses, this type of aircraft prototype. You have looked it for long time."

That time, I knew he like it so much, because he is airplane lover.

"Other than you, although I like the thing, I don't really need to have it!" he put back the airplane to the box.

My face blushed, this words really... makes me so embarrassed.

But...

"I have bought it!" I saw he put the lid cover, didn't touch it, he must be thought to return it.

"Even it has bought does not mean cannot be returned right? Who make the rule!" he glared me.

I really cannot endure it, I have tried to be thick face, "Please don't ah, I have bought it, I have begged the Boss from last year, I really want to see you happy, you are clearly like it, just keep it, actually not really expensive, only five... not right, 300, 300 Yuan!" I used my 3 fingers.

He gave me cold laugh, suddenly he pointed at the box which I cannot see the spot, "Wanted to lie? The price tag is still stick in the box, Miao Miao!"

I become rigid, tag, did he mean the price tag?

I panic, looking at the box, I looked for the price tag everywhere, softly murmured, "Where is the price tag? That bastard Boss, why must he stick the price tag, does he afraid no one know the price is 880 Yuan, bastard..."

After I said, Kang Yu made his voice longer, "Oh———! 880 Yuan!"

My body covered with cold sweat, "The price tag? That must be the boss mixed up with the price, actually it not that expensive!" I keep on looking at the price tag.

Kang Yu caught my hand, "No need to look for it, there is no price tag!"

My sweat is sweating heavily, simply to say it comparable with waterfall.

He... he scheming me!

This is not good, I beat myself to admit it.

Hence, he and I, both of us silent for moment.

Finally I tried myself to trick him, annoying to be troublemaker, "I don't care, I have bought it, I have begged, you do not want to accept, still must accept it, if you are not accepting it... I..." I stretch out my hand, pointing to his nose, "I won't marry you in the future!"

His eyes flashed and rolling, "If I accept it, you are really willing marry to me!"

My mind still find the way to make him accept his present, I don't care, I nodded my head, "That's right."

"Miao Miao, are you really married to me, are you sure? Not regret?"

I still nodding my head, "I am sure, no regret! I will marry to you, who afraid who."

"Not lie?"

"Absolutely no, who lies, then that person is bastard turtle!" I patted my chest.

After said, I hear the sound when I slapped the table, the sound from Kang Yu, I really don't know where he got the recording pen in his hand, he looked at me with smile, he pressed the button to replay.

“Miao Miao, are you really married to me, are you sure? Not regret?”

“I am sure, no regret! I will marry to you, who afraid who.”

“Not lie?”

“Absolutely no, who lies, then that person is bastard turtle!”

After that I heard slapping sound, he pressed the replay button and the voice replay again.

“Miao Miao, are you really married to me, are you sure? Not regret?”

“I am sure, no regret! I will marry to you, who afraid who.”

“Not lie?”

“Absolutely no, who lies, then that person is bastard turtle!”

After he replayed it until three times, he satisfied nodding his head, “Uncle Shen gave me this recording pen as my birthday present, not bad, the voice recorded very good!” he put back his recording pen to his pocket, he face me, “Miao Miao, you have agreed by yourself to my marriage proposal, I have the recording as evidence, you shall not be regretted, the present, I accepted, come, let’s eat, come on, the dishes will get cold!”

He happily to add many dishes to my bowl.

I, feel having mental lapse.

I have spent 880 Yuan, it still used my own money and also I sold myself by my own.

“I... wanted to return the good!” I have regretted now.

“Alright!” he smiled happily.

“Uhm, so that whatever I said before was not counted!” I really feel strange why he wanted to return the good, it clearly he has already accepted, I must marry to him.

He ckckckck (make sound from mouth), waving his finger, “Miao Miao, in the recorder that was not recorded about I accept the present then you will marry to me! If you not believe, I can replay it once again!”

He took out his recording pen, pressed the replay button.

“Miao Miao, are you really married to me, are you sure? Not regret?”

“I am sure, no regret! I will marry to you, who afraid who.”

“Not lie?”

“Absolutely no, who lies, then that person is bastard turtle!”

After he replayed, he pressed the stop button, he smiles widely, “You listened, is it right? There is no word about accepting present! So that... if the present wanted to be returned, you still marry to me! This is all what you said before, I don’t force you! Well, let’s eat.”

“.....”

I want to cry.....

“Miao Miao, what are you look distracted, let’s eat!” he looked innocently blinking his eyes.

“.....”

I turned and cry....

This is the evidence that present must not randomly gave!

Chapter 21 (21.1)

Chapter 21

Part 1 (One)

Kang Yu's dream

The college entrance exam is coming nearer, all the third year students are going into sprint mode period, all the entertainment events are dismissed for while, and perhaps the time to buy stinky tofu after the school could be used to calculate by estimating and the profit of the Boss by the calculus method. All night along is used to reviewing the homework, skip sleep and meal only to do all the drill books, the book is done one and continue to other.

This one year, for all the third year students are one of the most torturing and also exhausting mental.

I even miserable, in order to be focus for the entrance examination, my mother burned all my Manhwa books which I hide for long time, those were Hai Nan photography press printed, I could not buy it anymore.

My Crest of Royal Family, my Hakushaku Reijo (Bo Jue Qian Jin), my Ranma ½, my dragon ball... all already got burn.

My heart pain, my heart pain all cannot be restored.

Not only all of those, the anime VCD which popular during '99 which I bought by my money that I hardly save it from starving myself, it was not easy for me to ask my father to buy me one VCD player, I save money to buy the original discs which already subtitled from Japanese to Chinese. I have nine episodes animated disc (one episode about 25 minutes) for each disc, one disc priced 35 Yuan.

My Fushi Yugi, I only watched it two times and now it already turned into pieces.

I really cannot bear it anymore, needless to endure, I am going to be crazy!

"I will go to Fu Dan University, shanghai, I want all of you kneeling and begging for forgiveness from me!"

Human ah, one they got shocked, they are able to put down strong words, in this time no matter could be done or no, the important is venting the anger, all

are completely talking irresponsibly.

Since I have said it, I am type of person who has high self-pride, although I cannot fulfill it still I will put all my best to do it.

Hence, I tied headband in my forehead with motivational words, at last half month before the entrance examination, I started to study by gambling with my life, I thought, I have studied until this can be said as one of the most serious half month I have ever studied, simply to say that I am in possession mode.

Kang Yu...

During this time, I don't care who he is!

The most important for me now is won over this thing.

"Sis, it already 2AM, don't study anymore, you see yourself alike ghost now."

Very early in the morning, 2 AM. I still writing at tremendous speed doing my English drill book, my face already white, my under eye already has dark circle, my hair mess, it seems that I will death soon.

"Don't be noisy. I still have three drill books to do!" I took the Brand's Chicken essence which bought by my mom for me and Yan Yan, drink it until left no more.

TMD, it really tastes awful! I wiped my mouth, I continuing to have my review.

"Sis, if you keep doing this way, I see you perhaps won't able to stay until the entrance examination, that day!"

I don't care, I put all my focus to do the English drill book.

Fu Dan! Fu Dan! Fu Dan! Fight!

Kneeling! Kneeling! Kneeling! Good Luck!

Patter sound, too focus, too much using strength, the pencil refill break by me.

Change the new ones, keep continuing!

Yan Yan has gave up, she walked out of the room and help me to close the door.

I still read and doing my drill book, I heard faint voice from the door.

“How? Still not want to sleep?” This is my father’s voice.

“No, simply to say she is crazy!” Yan Yan answered.

Father panic, “You see yourself, you take a look, I have said that being ordinary don’t do such overboard!”

“I... I really don’t know this child can be this stubborn! I just afraid she read too much miscellaneous books (refer to manhwa), it would give bad influence to the entrance examination, I panic so... so...” This is my mother’s voice.

“Your own daughter, you gave birth her, how can you not know her character, you say you as mother, it’s not like you don’t understand her health condition, if she too exhausted, her sickness relapse, I want to know what would you do?” the way of father speaking similar like nagging.

“During that time I didn’t see you have any objection!” this time mother pissed off, her voice raised by three octave.

“Alright, don’t be noisy. I see sis quite okay, she only angry because her manhwa burn by Mom, I predicted she will be okay for during this time, let’s stop it, I want to go to sleep!” I heard Yan Yan said.

“Yan Yan, have you studied?” Mother changed the topic.

“Ugh...” I could make guess that Yan Yan face turned be dark.

“If Miao Miao not go to sleep, you also not allow to sleep, mom will help to tutor you!”

“Ah?” Yan Yan shocked.

“Your first choice is Fu Dan University, you must put all your effort! Come, come, we go to your room.”

“Don’t push me, mom!”

Outside the door there is footsteps sound, but not long after that, it becomes deathly silent again, perhaps because Yan Yan, Mom and Dad have left away.

I don’t have time to pity on her, I keep continuing do my drill book.

I play with my life and double my effort!

The last day of fact-finding test*, I feel it quite good, it really not waste all my effort, when the score announced, the math teacher said that there is one student who get full marks.

**fact-finding test similar with simulation test before the real examination.*

I thought the person must be Xu Ying, she is the human-study robot.

When I got my report card, my eye is open-wide, the person who got full marks it is me!

I really use my energy to blink my eyes, carefully look it.

150 full mark of the red pen, it filled my eyes.

It really full marks!

After school, Xu Ying and I also those fellow classmate that played wifey and daughter, role-play with me, they are congratulate me.

21. 2

Chapter 21

Part 2 (Two)

Kang Yu's dream

Zheng Xiao Qiu--my second wife gives me hug, "Hubby, you are too awesome, I really worried about your math result but now I can feel relieved, this examination test really difficult!"

"En en!" indeed the hard work is payoff.

"This face which is uglier than ghost face, although it is white not bad but now it seems that you are not turned become ghost but become Goddess. Your math result simply to say increase beyond the mortal!" Qi Bing Bing--my third wife patting my face.

"En en!" I am also thought that I would be Goddess.

Every day I sleep only three hours, if I cannot be Goddess at least I become Buddha.

"My beloved father, your body weight and your result are inversely propositional, this can be double happiness. Oh yeah, after school you must treat us eating stinky tofu!" My daughter with Xu Ying--Jin Yue, this daughter with Yan Yan quite similar, love to eat.

She said all is the fact, in order study for the entrance examination, I really become so thin, but still it quite far from my original weight.

At least now, I am in small fat category.

"En en!" I am treating. I will treat all of you until you don't eat to have dinner anymore.

"How is about since tomorrow we don't have class, then we relax ourselves one day, go to play, so that when we go home little bit late it is okay." Finally Xu Ying as the first wife opened her mouth.

One week before the college entrance examination, school is off and let the student in third year to focus at home for the final.

I am quite shocked. Does the world have red rain? The diligent student wanted to be lazy for one day.

“Okay, I go, I go!” Jin Yue happily raised her hand.

“I am also in!” Zeng Xiao Qiu tossed her bag.

“Miao Miao, and you?” Xu Ying asked.

“I...” little bit hesitated, “I... I want to see and meet the person that I have place in cold palace for long time!”

“Qie... seeing love forget friendship you little thing!” Qi Bing Bing touched my face with her two hands.

All of them are understood about my relationship with Kang Yu, so once I said about the person that I have put in cold palace they already know the person is?

“Since this is the case! Humph, my father, you go to see your man, but you are not only treat us eating stinky tofu but also McDonald’s, raised hand for those agree!” at the moment Jin Yue has raised both of her hand.

“I agreed!”

“Me too!”

Looking at their hand a like springtime bamboo shoots that soil after rain, I really cannot hinder from them.

Suddenly my happiness turned to be grievance....

Pity my purse.

**

I am happily coming to Uncle Shen’s house, I haven’t entered but have shouted: “Kang Yu, you make a guess how much score I had from my simulation test?” I entered and then go upstairs, I see Uncle Shen and Kang Yu are having serious conversation, their expression are so strict.

After seeing me, Uncle Shen stopped and then he stood up and patted kang Yu’s shoulder: “Brat, you must think it clearly by yourself!”

I feel strange and looked at both of them.

When Uncle Shen looked at me, his expression has already changed not so serious anymore, he has changed to his normal self, “Miao Miao coming, what thing that make you are so happy? Let Uncle Shen Know.”

I hehehehe smiled, “I have full mark for my examination!” I gave my examination result.

“Great! Great!” Uncle Shen patting my head, “Miao Miao got full mark, Uncle Shen treats you eating ice cream.”

I nodding my head happily, “Thank you Uncle Shen.”

“You and Kang Yu have chat, I will go to take my most expensive ice cream for you!”

I stunned and drooling, I happily standing in front of Kang Yu, “what happen? Why you are saying nothing?”

“Miao Miao... I...” he lifts his head and looked at me and then bow down again.

His appearance as if losing his soul, it makes me worry, “What happen? Are you study too much and get exhausted, sick?”

I touched his head, I afraid I cannot feel it accurately; I lift his bang and touched his forehead, “You are not having fever! Or are you having stomachache?”

“It is not!” he took my hand, he let me to sit beside him, “I am not sick, I just have something to tell you, but you mustn’t angry after hear it...”

Angry? He talked as if he never made me angry before.

He have annoyed me for four years already. I looked calm and collected.

“Said, I won’t angry!” I guess he will scheme me again, I have to be alert.

21.3

Finally it is the separation for Miao Miao and Kang Yu.
The separation not because they stop love each other,
But...The separation for the better future
It not long but also not short....

Chapter 21

Part 3 (Three)

Kang Yu's dream

“Miao Miao...” he gripped my hand, very tightly, and then he put in front his chest.

“En?” I encourage him through my eyesight and looked at him.

He gripped my hand even tighter, took deep breathe, slowly said: “Miao Miao, I cannot join the college entrance examination!”

I turned be rigid my whole body, I looked alike white sculpture.

“Miao Miao, I am so sorry, but really I cannot give up on this opportunity, perhaps this opportunity won’t be anymore, so...”

So.. and still so...

When I gained myself, “So what, you have made your decision, still want to ask me, you better give me a reason! It was not easy for Uncle Shen to help you stay in Shanghai for the college entrance examination, why you must give up!” I free my hand, I stay far away from him, he is not Shanghainese, as the regulation he should not follow the college entrance examination in here, he must go back to his original place to have examination, lucky that Uncle Shen has so many connection, he knows many education officers, moreover he is Manchuria which classify as minority but his study is outstanding. This is also an opportunity that not easy to get.

But now he gave it up!

I feel get provoking, I started to move in circle inside the house.

I really wanted to find feather duster to teach him alike mother teaching their son.

“Miao Miao, what is my dream?” Kang Yu sat on his bed side, his black eyes

looking at me.

I still haven't found out the feather duster, "Pilot! Your first choice is to enter Civil Aviation University of China!"

"If I have better opportunity to make me become better pilot, should I give up or not?"

"Of course not, this is your dream, but, what is the relation whether you join the college entrance or not!" I can't stop myself to find feather duster. I really pissed off seeing him.

Kang Yu took out two things from his shelf, he handed it over to me, "you take look and you will understand."

I angry took it from him. I really wanted to know the reason he gave me.

He gave me a piece of poster, it written that the most famous German Airline LTU airlines have holding selection for 18-20 years old Chinese youth in Shanghai from entire China. For any degree, after the selection, go for the semi-finals, and then final. After select 10 people once again they will be interviewed and at last there will only select three most outstanding youth to join. This three young people will be under LTU senior pilot supervision, and also the most well-known senior pilot in the world, Mr. Holst Cherkinski Ryder. He will supervise them by himself for three years in strict training.

Huo Er Si (Holst). Qie Er Jin Si (Cherkinski). Li Chai De (Ryder)

After the training period ended, all of them can be the first Chinese who will have internship in LTU airlines, moreover they are also assist German LTU airlines in Shanghai headquarter for the International flight. Training period is three years, for those who pass the examination they can become the official pilot for the German LTU airlines.

Holst Cherkinski Ryder? This name sound so familiar.

I take looked at the poster.

Pre-selection time : May 28

Semi-Final : June 16

Final : June 25

Interview date : July 7 – July 9

I dumbfounded for while, it seems that another piece of paper must be the final confirmation letter.

It is written Kang Yu's name.

So that he is one from the ten people.

He will be interviewed on 7 July.

While 7 – 9 July is the college entrance examination for the '99.

So that he cannot join the college entrance examination.

I cannot help myself to say harsh word, “TNND, I just not see you for more than one month, you have gone to join what competition, you really think about me? You didn't say anything to me!”

Kang Yu looked so composed, “First time when I wanted to tell you, you asked me not to disturb you, you have shouted at me, you didn't have time, you let me to do whatever I wanted as long as I not disturb your study!”

I tried to recall the last month phone call...

I am sweating like heavy rain...

Ou Yang Miao Miao, you are idiot!

But...

“Kang Yu, it only the final confirmation letter, it is not the last confirmation, as you see there are ten people who joined and only 3 will be selected, it only have three opportunities, there is no guarantee you will be selected, but if you join the college entrance examination, based on your performance and achievement, you must be able to enter Civil Aviation university of China, I can endure myself to have long distance relationship with you, but why you must choose this competition! Wait until you graduated, it still same you will be pilot too!”

“That is right, but in order to enter German LTU airline, this is the only opportunity I have, once I get selected, I can be pilot, and no need to follow so many steps such as study and waiting for graduation, waiting for the airlines recruitment. As long as I got selected, I can focus and concentrate on my

training as acceptable pilot. Moreover I really don't have to worry about learning for professional study will happen, furthermore, my idol is in LTU, if I really get selected he will be my teacher, only by thinking about it I feel so excited!"

Finally I remember that Holst Cherkinski Ryder is Kang Yu's idol.

"Pei! What idol, he only rotten old man!"

Go hell go TMD that one the most well-known pilot! His surname is longer than his name!

"Miao Miao!" this is the first time Kang Yu roared me.

"You bastard, for you I am not as that rotten... not that most well-known pilot important!" I vented my anger and roared him back, " If you really succeed it fine, but don't you think if you failed, you don't have right to join the college entrance examination, you still need to wait one year, when the time arrive, I have been becoming university student while you are in waiting list participating the adult college entrance or self-test, although the standard still same with the self-study, but today's not many people think that way, moreover, it only stated as training pilot, will they give you college certificate?"

"What this to do with the diploma certificate?" he frowned.

"Of course it important, you won't pass my mom!"

College diploma is important but also not really important, although you say it not important but still it so important for him. Or else, why I must hear my mom said since I was little girl, "If you cannot graduate from college just wait sweeping the street." She threatened me.

See, what this mean? To be honest my mom is belongs to the social group that value diploma certificate more important, this really different with the foreigner, they are value more skill or else German LTU airline wasn't state any about four year diploma education.

Of course, if my mom knows how welfare the sanitation worker in 21 century, to enter so difficult, she definitely won't say these things.

However this is not the important thing, the important is in the future when he meet parent, my mother must be looked down at him, he has already had one

thing that my mom most dislike— he is not Shanghainese.

My mom is middle age woman who is similar with other average Shanghainese women, all of them have three sickness. First, who value city as superior, the second is stubbornness for the diploma graduation, and the third is college entrance examination result. If only have senior high certificate is looked with one eye.

This generation of the Shanghainese way of thinking is hard to change.

I really expected him to join the college entrance examination, and then study in college and then after he graduated he can find one steady job, when the time comes, he could pass my mom obstacle.

But he really did all the opposites.

When I thought until here, I started to cry.

“You are bastard, you never thought about me!” I run to hit him, “Bastard... bastard... bastard.”

Kang Yu let me to hit him, he also patting my back and go along with my mood. This time I really crying too much, I have asthma.

I am tired from crying, climb to his side and get the handkerchief from his hand and continue sobbing.

“Miao Miao, are you really sure that I cannot success?”

“I know you are so outstanding, but there is something that cannot only depend on outstanding but also luck!” I tried to calm myself, take deep breathe, answered him.

“Who do you think I am?” he said so confidently.

I can’t help myself to belittle him, “you are the most black heart person in the world, you are also an alien.”

“.....”

Deathly silent.

After some times, Kang Yu slowly said, “ Miao Miao, believe on me, okay, I won’t make you disappointed!”

I keep silent.

“Miao Miao?” he started to use his voice to coax me.

My ear actually is so soft, very unhappy, but still nodded.

He hugs me tightly, suddenly I realized when he had made his decision the thing that I must do is to support him.

I agree but there still problem suddenly I remember.

“Kang Yu, if you are accepted, will you go there for the training?”

“Hamburg.”

I surprised, “Overseas!”

Although I have made preparation for the long distance relationship, but it only for the domestic, not as far as the other side of earth.

“Three years! It only three years, Miao Miao!” he has enchanting voice and also gentle eyes that seducing.

Not only my ears soften but also my heart, I really cannot endure his seduction.

Compromise!

Three years! Fine! Only three years!

I am still hug by him, while he is hugging me alike baby.

I still enjoying but suddenly remember one thing, paused and crying.

Kang Yu shocked, “What are you crying for?”

“Chest, the women in overseas they have big size of chest!” my tear is streaming down alike waterfall.

“.....”

Finally when think about Kang Yu bitterness, I turned back.

Chapter 22 (22.1)

Happy New Year

Welcome 2016 and Good bye 2015.

Thank you to give me many good memories and experiences within the year of 2015. Please be good to me and all the people this year, wish all the best to all fellow readers

Happy New Year 2016, welcomed (^.^)

Chapter 22

Part 1 (One)

Three Years later

7 – 9 July 1999, the weather was extremely hot, the temperature even can fry egg only by adding oil into the street surface.

Outside the examination room, the parents of the student who participating the entrance examination have filled and packed in front of the school and also street.

Inside the examination room, the fan has turned into the maximum but still so hot, I felt extremely hot and sweating, fortunately, I have chosen Literature major, the first two days of examination were not bad and this is my last examination test. English makes me so nervous, I have weakness in math and also English so that once I get inside school gate I have started shivering. Kang Yu wasn't here because he went for the interview. I really worry about him, so anxious, in the morning I have ate fry egg, fermented bean curd, and plain porridge which now make my stomach not comfortable.

I could not endure it anymore so I rushed into toilet to throwing out.

I feel little bit dizzy, my eyes blur but still I endured it until the last examination test.

The result of my achievement really made happy, in mid-august I received Fu Dan University acceptance letter of the Journalism Department.

This is what called as the legendary examination luck!

At the same time it happened to Kang Yu too, he got accepted in German LTU airlines and also he became the best candidate.

The first time he told me, I felt so happy but also sad.

His dream came true, but it also means that both of us must be separated for

three years.

He went to Hamburg, German on August 28, since I knew it, I had cried until August 28. Although when I received my university acceptance letter it still could not make me stop from crying. I almost blinded my eyes.

At last all my fellow sisters and also wives and daughter supported me, gave courage to send him to airport with smile.

Once the airplane flied, I was inside the airport terminal and crying to the level of deafening, I even laying on the floor and at last the security guard that in charge for the airport came and comforting me.

Three years later...

I could not wait even one day!

I really am serious to give up on him.

However, in this world the most viable and the strongest creature still is a woman.

Three years later, I still living-human.

If wanted to compare three years in high school was alike jail then my university life is similar to released from prison. I really thanked Grandpa Deng Xiao Ping, he had dismantled the China feudal gates without trace, makes China be better place especially Shanghai, the progress and development is flying alike rocket.

At the beginning of 1999, it was Computer era, at the same time, the mobile phone has rapid development, thanks to math and numbers, it lets Kang Yu and me who living separated and far no need to worry about communicating.

The most important is—Detective Conan was broadcasting in Shanghai at the beginning on 1 July 1999. Within three years, it really perfect to comfort me who was feeling lonely inside my heart.

Conan-sama, Kid-sama, I love all of you!

“Ou Yang Miao Miao, this is my last time to warn you, if you are still watching Japanese animation inside the dormitory room, I will cut ties with you!” the thundering voice suddenly came out from my behind.

I turned my back, “My Dong Bei (Northeast) fellow classmate, Gu Ling Li, calm down, the animation is boundless!”

“Calm down your P*, it still tolerate you have watched using the Chinese dubbing but why you still insist to hear with the original Japanese dubbing, don’t you seek for death!” after said, she used the pillow to hit me.

She hits me couple times, I have already known so I avoided her hitting, “Cannot help ah, Shanghai only translated it until episode 101, they have already stopped, so that I have download through BT, as you know BT only have Japanese dubbing and Chinese subtitles.”

It not because I worship Japanese but the Japanese dubbing really too great, I listened one time and then I completely subdue by it.

The real Japanese fan won’t look at the Chinese dubbing.

The Japanese dubbing is really awesome.

Both of us are too noisy, so our classmate, Sun Ling wakes up from her nap, awaken beauty really charming.

But...

“TMD, yesterday I had played online game for entire night, I have slept on 6, awake because the noise, I chop both of you!” she spoke all the rude words and at same time two pillows are flying out.

I got hit, and also Ling Li is naturally not lucky to escape.

The reality confirms the beauty people are not always has beauty personality.

“Comrade, time to eat, today the canteen have red braised pork, Miao Miao, I have brought you lunch box!” Li Jia Ying who just came back to dormitory shouted at me.

Red braised pork!

I really excited and run to her, “Give me, quickly give me!”

“Wash your hands!” said Ye Li who stood at Li Jia Ying back. She is fame with her mysophobia (obsession with cleanliness).

I swallowed my saliva, it better for me to wash my hand in wash basin quickly.

Smells the meat, Sun Ling awake and scratching her head, “Do I have share?”

“Come, we eat together!” Li Jia Ying put the lunch box on the table.

“Don’t touch my red braised pork!” I have washed my hand and rushing to the table, I took the red braised pork with chopstick from Sun Ling’s.

“I have stayed all the night, I need nutritious food!” She was also unhappy to see me when I took and ate the red braised pork.

22.2



Chapter 22

Part 2 (Two)

Three Years later

I licked my lips, “Nutritious food! You already have many nutritious foods which sent in front the door, from those men in our department, the literature department, and as long as men in our school, they are all sending you many good food and drink, and now you even mention about nutritious food, you see those snacks box under your bed, it has been overflowing!”

“Well you eat the snack and then I eat the red braised pork!”

“I don’t want!” I put the red braised pork, “I just like red braised pork.”

Sun Ling frowned, “Miao Miao, what is your weight?”

Her question is alike an arrow that shot right into my chest.

“140 or 150? Ahahaha!” She is patting my shoulder.

When the red braised pork almost get inside my mouth, I have reluctantly to put down it back to my lunch box, I glared at her, “You have gut!”

“Thank you!” she happily took my red braised pork, not only that, she even deliberately moving her small waist in front of me!

I fist my hand, I really want to cry.

I really dislike this type of girl who can’t be fat even eat many things.

It stills the gentle Jia Ying good to me, “Miao Miao, eat the beef curry, it won’t make you fat!”

I sniffed, “Thank You.”

“Fat just fat, at least Miao Miao have handsome boyfriend who she waiting for, childhood sweetheart, they have deep feeling, who afraid that P* fat, Even you as the school flower doesn’t even have one!”

Gu Ling Li is naturally cleaver, she makes Sun Ling chocked after eating the red braised pork.

"Huk... huk..." her eyes red, "I only have man that wooing me!"

"That's right, you have, but none of them can be compared to Kang Yu Wang Ye, hehehe!"

Since they knew I have boyfriend with Ai Xin Jue Luo surname, all of them even more excited than me.

"Miao Miao, when Wang Ye comes back, I really want to see him in the real person!"

Kang Yu is Northeast people, Ling Li also, so that she especially interested with Kang Yu, every times I have video chat with Kang Yu, she would sit at my sidelines and drooling.

Ling Li also beautiful, she has strong character that not many Shanghainese girls have, there are also many men who wooing her.

Jia Ying also not bad, she and Sun Ling are native Shanghainese, both of them also have many suitor.

For overall it's only me who does not have suitor.

Crying...

"Miao Miao, answer ah, when will he backs. Our Northeast "product", I really want to see him." Ling Li said.

"Summer holiday, he said the beginning of July, but he hasn't set the date."

Kang Yu has passed the training, he has already become pilot, when he backs to Shanghai he will start his work soon."

Ling Li expression changed, "Summer holiday! I must go for blind match-dating during summer holiday!"

Hah! Sun Ling and I also Jia Ying surprised.

"Blind date!" Sun Ling screamed, "You... you go for blind date, what era are you living, go for blind date!"

Ling Li said, "There is nothing to do about it, all of us are marriage in early."

"But not this early ah, we are third year university student, haven't graduated!" Jia Ying wiped her mouth with tissue.

"If meet the one that suit me, dating for one year and then after graduate, it is time for getting marriage!" Ling Li continuing to eat, she puts her red braised pork into my mouth.

"Doesn't our department handsome boy, Cui Juan pursuing you, don't you have feeling for him?" I said.

He is quite good looking like Kang Yu but only he is little bit short.

"I dislike Shanghai man, too mommy-boy!" She is swaying her chopstick.

"Don't stereotypes, not all the Shanghai men are mommy-boy!" Sun Ling refuted.

I only focus on the red braised pork, drooling and nodding.

"Whatever I just dislike, I like..." her eyes rolled, "Someone alike Kang Yu!"

"Go to hell! Don't ever think about it, he is Miao Miao's man! It's still better for you to go blind date!" Sun Ling bluntly said.

"Cannot only by thinking ah, still better if can touch." She pathetically is looking at me.

"Wait until he comes back, I will let you to touch him, who ask you to help me reviewing my English!" who asked me to accept others kindness, I really sinister!

"Stills Miao Miao good." She said with her greasy mouth and trying to kiss me.

"Yi———so dirty, don't come here!" I hurried hide.

"Come here, come here!" she chasing me and wanted to kiss me, I just wanted to stay away from her.

I cannot help, just using my hand to stop her, pushed her way.

She showed hurtful expression, "Miao Miao, you really heartless, I know you are only wanted Kang Yu!"

"That's right, I have waited him for three years and only wanted him, is there any problem to you?"

This word, I don't feel shameful when said it.

"Other than kiss, don't you think to do others, alike making love?" Ling Li is

tempted, leaning her head in front of me.

I pretending not hear anything, "What!"

"For example..." Sun Ling also joining, "hehehehehe!"

I stunned and my face blushed, " Hehe your head, hehe your head, eat your food!"

"Ahahahaham Miao Miao embarrassed!" Sun Ling and Ling Li are laughing so hard.

Jia Ying tamely eating her meal, but her eyesight flashed vaguely, really so vague.

This group of women!

This is an opened society with corrupt practice, not alike olden life, this kind of word cannot be randomly said.

I don't care about them, I add vegetable into my bowl, sitting and eating on my bed.

My brain is still thinking that shameless things.

Kang Yu and I....

It seems that we must go one step further.

By thinking of it, my face burn red until my ears, what hell I am thinking of, I must have been poisoned, I really have been poisoned by that two girls.

But, more I don't want to think about it, more my brain filled with all those things.

Arghhhhhh!

I am screaming inside my heart! I crazily hit my head.

Ou Yang Miao Miao, how can you be this vulgar!

To say, I have imaged Kang Yu appeared to be naked!

I really never seen Kang Yu naked, his face and the manhwa naked male joined together, lying in kingsize bed with red rose, that kind of imagination.

Thump! Thump!

Suddenly I heard Jia Ying screaming sound, “Miao Miao, you have nosebleed!”

I quite surprised to feel something warm and sticky, it dripping wet, I reflective raising my hand and rub it, I see again, I screaming out loud, “Ah! I... have... nosebleed!”

Hence, all of us are in chaos.

Kang Yu, it seems I have thought you until get possessed, you hurried come back!

When you come back, I will...

Suddenly, my nosebleed spouts out....

Chapter 23 (23.1)



Chapter 23

Part 1 (One)

Wang Ye comes back

“Sis, mom have cooked pig liver soup, she wants you to drink it while hot!”

“Where’s mom, why she let you to serve it for me?”

On Friday, I often to spend my weekend at home, this is the advantage study in local school, I can go home as often as I want.

“She went to Garden with father, go there to used the fitness equipment.”

“Oh!” I took the soup bowl from Yan Yan, “What a big bowl of soup, it will make me so full!” both of my nose’s hole are sticking with cotton, I could not smell anything, drink it without any interested.

“Who asked you to have nosebleed, a like Yellow River! Dad and Mom are scared to death because of you! And me too!” Yan Yan patting her chest, it is so obviously they are really feared with my nosebleed.

I put down the soup bowl in my computer desk, scratching my head, “Suffer from excessive internal heat.”

Yan Yan rolled her eyes, peek on me who is watching Detective Conan, asked, “What episode is it?”

“287th episode, Kudo acts in New York (The speculative chapter)!” the last chapter was Kudo acts in New York (Incident chapter)!

“Stills better for me to wait and watch it next week when this chapter comes out! Everything of Japanese is an evil, the anime only comes out once chapter per week!”

For this, I do also feel irritating, “That’s true! It is too tormenting!”

“Well, next week you gather all the three chapters to disk, I will bring it to school and watch at there!”

I nodded, Yan Yan although she not successfully entered Fu Dan, or others

university but she still entered three-year college (professional training). She entered East China Normal University majority in managerial administrative. This year she graduated.

“Oh yeah, tomorrow is the reunion for the junior high school classmates, will you join or not, if not I must inform Xiao Fan first!”

I drank the soup, patting my hand, “No problems, the fellow friends reunions, cannot be short of me!”

Three years have passed so fast, all the fellow sisters are already go to own favorite university, Xu Ying went to Shanghai Jiao Tong University, Da Shuang went to Shanghai Hai Dong Hua University, Xiao Fan went to Shanghai University of Engineering and Technology, although Liu Li Jun only graduated from senior high but she also entering to vocational school with Xiao Shuang. Both of them admitted to good school too.

“En, you take your rest, don’t watch any anime, careful with your nosebleed!”

My little sister recently likes to nag.

“I know, you hurry go to busy yourself!” now she is busy to write resume, find a job.

Yan Yan just walked away, my phone is ringing.

It is a message.

I took up my cute Mitsubishi mobile phone, during this time, the phone still in green screen and there is no MMS, ring tones, even colors. This mobile phone was my present from Dad when I entered university, it cost 1980 Yuan. While Yan Yan is decided to have Nokia 3210 – the one with legendary arcade game.

I pressed the button to check actually I don’t really need to look at it because I knew it was Kang Yu.

Now it is nine o’clock evening in Shanghai, while German must be three thirty afternoon, but if there is winter the difference of time must be about 7 hours.

It written: Miao Miao, now I have time, video call!

Video call!

I am shivering because my appearance now is similar with ghost due to my nose bleeding and swollen face, how can I see him! No! No! Absolutely cannot!

I faster replied him, “The web cam is broken, still in repair! QQ !”

I shut realplay, I log in into QQ, waiting for Kang Yu but he suddenly calling my phone directly.

I hurried pick his phone call, “Yu!”

Because of the science and technology improvement, addressing someone is simpler, so this is also one of the ways to show intimacy.

“Why your voice sounded heavy, catch cold?” He really have sharp ears, I just called him with one word, but perhaps because my nose is stuffed with cotton so that my voice sound little bit heavy.

I not dare to tell about my nose bleeding, because now is still... bleeding.

“I... catch cold little bit!” I answered him.

“It is serious? Have you eats medicine? Drink more water!” series of cautions heard from the phone.

“It is not serious, I had medicine also water!” I hurried answered him, or else he would be more chatty.

“En! This much better, don’t neglect to have meal and sleep because watching anime, you do not really have strong body...”

He is starting to nagging, I hurried to cut his words, “You, when will you back?”

“8 July, I will be arrived at Shanghai 8.15, Pu Dong airport, Shanghai—the terminal number, German LTU airlines 3846!”

“Wait, speak slowly, let me take my pen and note it.” I Said too detailed.

“Noted what, before I go to plane, I will message you, you dare not to pick me up, humph!”

I not dare ah! I look forward, “Should I tell Uncle Shen?”

“I have told him, I will ask him to pick you up, afraid you muddleheaded and cannot find the terminal!”

He really understands me, I live until today, how many times I have went to airport, it was three years ago and after that I never went there anymore, when time comes, I afraid I really cannot find the terminal.

I still on phone while marking my calendar date, make circle in 8 July with red pen, counting the days, still more than one month to go.

Really tormenting!

“Yu, this time you come back, not go anywhere again, right?” we have separated for three years, just in case to experience again, I thought I really cannot endure it.

“Once I come back, I will start to flight, still go for internship three years, get the license and I will apply to stay and post in shanghai, rest assured, you must obediently waiting for me!”

I really feel happy to death, “En en! Of course I have obediently waiting for you.”

I could hear Kang Yu laughing voice through the phone, within three years, his voice has sounded mature and masculine, he really has sexy voice it makes my heart little bit itchy.

I can't help myself to say, “Yu, I miss you!”

After said, I really feel wanted to cry, I tried to control myself!

Kang Yu silent for while.

I feel little bit stress because his silence, then I heard Yan Yan's voice calling me.

“Sis said to brother in law that I also need privacy, my computer is my private tool, it is not public-shared!”

I stunned, stood up, I rushed into Yan Yan's room.

Her computer displayed Kang Yu's handsome face.

I thud a moment, quickly I covered my nose because the camera is right in front of me.

Suddenly voice comes out from the computer's speaker, “What happen to

your nose!"

Get caught!

23.2



Chapter 23

Part 2 (Two)

Wang Ye comes back

I don't need to cover it anymore. I sat down in front of Yan Yan's computer desk, stammered: "Suffer from excessive internal heat!"

"You got suffered from excessive internal heat until your nose that swollen!" his face dark, does not know whether because the computer have too high quality of resolution, I could see his vein seen in his forehead very clear as if his real person is really in front of me.

"Needless to say this why suddenly you troubled Yan Yan!" I cast sidelong glancing at my sister who sat and sulked in her bed.

"Didn't you say that you missed me, now I let you to see me and also I wanted to see whether you crying or not, just to avoid myself being absent-minded during the simulation flying practice!" he said.

"It is okay, I am fine!" I quickly shook my head, I really don't want to disturb his practice.

"Have seen me, are you feeling better?"

I nodded.

"Extend your hand!" he said.

"Why?" I asked.

"Let you to touch me!"

Touch!

I feel frustrated inside me, and then I thought, touching him through the computer screen, what can I feel? But still I stretching my hand, I used my finger to touch his eyebrows, nose and his silhouette.

“One month and three days, Miao Miao, you can touch the real me, just bear it, can you?”

I almost crying, “En!”

“Give me one big smile so that I can feel at ease!” he sighed.

I smiled widely, I really wanted to laugh but somewhat my smile is too rigid, moreover my nose is stuffed with cotton, once I smile it looked so weird.

“Good! I screenshot it! At least your picture could make me feel happy for one month!”

I can’t help myself to tremble.

It reflects his true nature.

Thinking, I really burst out my laughing sound, this time must be absolutely natural.

“Hahahahaha!” I really don’t know how to say him.

Kang Yu sees me laughing he also following me to laugh.

Hence, both of us are laughing through the computer, have wide laughed.

See at Yan Yan who is seethe with anger, “Both of you are pair of illicit man and woman! I wanted to break off with both of you!”

When Kang Yu and I heard it we even laugh louder.

It will go quickly, one month three days, he will come back to my side.

**

8 July 2002, it is the date when Kang Yu comes back, early in the morning I have went to salon to do my hair.

“Miss, what kind of style do you want?”

I made fist with my hands, “Do a kind of hair dressing where man able to notice I have visited salon, that style!”

“.....” the hair dresser is speechless.

I said, “What are you distracted for, faster, I rushed the time!”

The hairdresser is really skilled, I have made kind of weird request but he really perm my hair and make it curly.

I looked at mirror, I find myself really cute.

Hm, not bad, not bad.

I paid the money. I rushed to lady's beauty salon.

Shaping my eyebrows, facial, masker, I do all completely.

My purse immediately got skim for 100%

I also rushed to go home and non-stop to trying on my clothes.

"This one is good, this one also good!" I have compared two clothes, asking Yan Yan suggestion.

Yan Yan has been tortured by me and lying in bed now.

"Sis, you have tried for 5 hours, I beg you to give me face, don't ask me anymore, you made your decision!"

"Is this your attitude as my little sister, don't you know that today is one of my important days in my life!" I haven't seen Kang Yu for three years, three years depended on web camera, looking back and forth it a face from other half earth, I tried to compensate by looking at it.

Yan Yan has been forced by me so she raised her finger, pointed, "This one! This must be able to make Kang Yu goes to bed!"

"What nonsense you burst out!" I took the clothes and threw it to her.

Yan Yan who has buried in the pile of clothes said, "Really, this one is the best, low-cut dress, it could show your advantages!"

"Is it?" I really believed on her.

Yan Yan nodding, "I guarantee you Kang Yu must be directly strike to you."

Immediately I took that low cut dresses and paired it with skirt. looked my reflection in mirror.

Black color it makes me looked skinny.

Short sleeve, it only covered my fleshy arm little bit.

High waist to cover the bulge pot belly.

Long skirt to give illusions for long slender legs.

Chiffon, elegant and beautiful.

Low-cut... I looked at myself that exposed “little Marianas Trench”.

“Yan Yan, can this too much to show!” this dress I never wore it since I bought, that time I thought this cloth has goddess aura, so elegant.

Yan Yan said, “It won’t be, it only little bit, what era now, those who does not have, they insist to show one, moreover you who born with it naturally!”

I nodded, it is right, I have why mustn’t I not exposed.

Decided, I wear this one!

Everything is ready!

Kang Yu, you just wait for me to tempting you.

Not right, you are waiting me to welcome you.

Six o’clock evening, Uncle Shen comes to pick me up, after I entered university, my mom and my dad not that strict anymore toward me, during the night I only need to say to them and then I can go out, along the way I really feel so excited, I just asked Uncle Shen, “Am I beautiful?”

Uncle Shen is so kind to answered me, “Very beautiful, if I still at my 40, I will definitely wooing you! I guarantee you once Kang Yu sees you he must be tempted by you!”

I really satisfied.

Pu Dong Airport is quite far from my house, we need to spend one and half hour to arrive at airport, Uncle Shen parked the car in parking area and then we go to the terminal café, sitting and waiting for Kang Yu.

We have spent 20 minutes 15 seconds, still 45 minutes, every minutes and seconds, as if waiting for one year, every 5 minutes I will go to check on the information board, I just afraid to miss the time.

Or sometimes every 5 minutes I go to restroom, go to check my hair and my clothes.

Finally, after I have waited for 20 minutes 15 seconds, I stood up in front of the international arrival exit, stretching out my neck to check on Kang Yu's figure.

Perhaps Uncle Shen afraid I might hurt my neck, he said, "Miao Miao, it won't be that fast, after the airplane landed, still needs to go through customs check, take the luggage, don't be worry!"

I feel little bit disappointed why after landed the airplane still need to go for many process.

There still the time, I go to restroom, I check on myself in mirror, the cleaning service aunty perhaps thought me as mental.

20 minutes 45 seconds, I have stood until my leg feel little bit numb, but still haven't seen Kang Yu, panic, nervous, excited, impatience all are tormenting me.

Almost 21 minutes, finally I spotted Kang Yu who dragged his luggage, among the crowded I could only see him shining and brightly, it makes my eyesight only locked on him.

Hence, I really don't care with anything, I rushed there.

23.3



Chapter 23

Part 3 (Three)

Wang Ye comes Back

“Miss, you cannot enter!” one of the security guard, stopped me.

I kicked him away and fly toward Kang Yu.

Kang Yu sees me and he opened wide his hand to hug me, and then smiled to me.

I really similar with monkey, hugging him tightly, a pair of my leg clasp as if twisting to his waist.

“Kang Yu! Kang Yu!” I cried and shouted his name, as if I haven’t called him for my entire life.

Would three years really as long as entire life?

“Miao Miao! You have promised me not to cry!”

“Just let me!” fortunately I didn’t do makeup or otherwise my makeup must be messed.

I buried my face in his chest, I still can’t believe he has come back, he really came back.

Kang Yu embraced me, we walked until the exit, Uncle Shen saw him, he also have tears but also scolded him, “You little brat, you are little brat!”

Kang Yu stretches out his hand, patting Uncle Shen’s shoulders and then three of us hug together.

Uncle Shen cries, I cry, Kang Yu comfort me, and also comfort him, he really busy.

Finally after I cried enough, I calmed myself, I climbed down from him.

I haven’t looked him carefully.

I lifted my head up, I realized he grows higher again, three years today, he has been matured, his face is sharper, completely so masculine, his shoulder is wider, also strong. His skin still same like before, healthy golden tan colored.

My God, I really don't know how handsome he is now.

"Miao Miao, don't you want to touch me?"

I still hesitated whether to touch him or not.

"If you don't touch, let me do it."

I dumbfounded, "what?"

Suddenly Kang Yu big hand touched my face, warmly with his fingers touching my eyebrows, eyes, nose, and also my lips, he touches me as if I am his lost treasure that he has been searching for his life time.

After some times, after he done, he sighed, "Fortunately, you have not swindled by anyone!"

My face blushed, who will swindle me ah, it only you the stupid.

He embraces me and I tightly hug around to waist.

He really comes back!

"Hi! Duke, I am sorry to let you wait for so long time."

By my surprised, there is voice that speaking English caught by my ears, I shocked.

I saw blonde man who looked like Tom Cruise and that foreign man looked me curiously.

Who? Who is he?

I frustrated, Kang Yu said to me, "Miao Miao, let me introduce he is my colleagues, Leo Carter!"

"Oh!" I panic and replied him, "Nice to meet you!" and then I whispered to Kang Yu, "Why he called you "Duck*""?"

Leo called Kang Yu Duke but Miao Miao heard it as Duck.

He also whispered to me, "My English name!"

English name, I glanced at him, his English name is “flashy”.

Duke is title for the nobility, at same time it has equivalent meaning with Wang Ye in Chinese.

Kang Yu glanced back to me, as if he said do you think this name is made by myself?

Oh, I understood.

It seems there might be something interesting, I will ask him later.

“Me too!” the foreign handsome not bother answered me, and then he said to Kang Yu “She is often you mentioned the girlfriend?”

Although my English really terrible, at least my English level is university level, naturally I understood.

He is asking Kang Yu, am I his girlfriend that he often mentioned?

I heard and understood. I smiled so sweetly.

But Kang Yu said, “No!”

At sudden my face changed, why not!

Kang Yu stared at me, I looked stunned but he answered him in English, “She is not my girlfriend, she is my...” suddenly he lower his head, his eyesight gently looked at me, “Fiancée, she is my fiancée!”

Once again my face changed, this time really changed to be red.

Fiancée means the future wife!

Future wife! Afterall he said that I am his future wife!

Now I feel my heart is bursting with sweetness.

Secretly I tugged Kang Yu’s sleeves, looked at his eyes, What?

I moved my fingers, hinting him to lower his head.

He lowered his head, now I said in his ears, “Since when I become your future wife?”

He frowned, “what? You want to renege on debt!”

Renege on debt? Why must I renege on debt?

He took out pen recorder from his pocket, he swayed in front of me, "Miao Miao, don't think to break your word, I have the evidence with me!"

I really forgot about that thing, why he brings that thing with him everywhere.

If early I know, I won't ask him, lower my head, speechless, but my heart really fill with sweetness.

Later on, Kang Yu and Mr. Leo carter have conversation in English, I quite surprised to hear Kang Yu speaks English as fluent as speaking in mother tongue, as expected, those who went to overseas really not same.

What they said, some I understood such as, I understood... chest, I really despised my hearing ability, also the colloquial speech so that I not really understand the word.

The Chinese who were taught the English really an evil.

To the extend, this old man, uncle Shen who ever studied in overseas as exchanged student also used fluent English to join the conversation, it only me, who cannot speak but still forcing myself.

If not because Kang Yu who keeps me by his side, embraces me perhaps I have dug big hole and jump in.

After they spoke for while, Kang Yu said, "Let's go!"

I understood this word, if I not understand, it better for me to jump from building.

"Are we leaving now? Let me help you to take the luggage! You guys have chat!" I dragged his luggage, I tried to find something to do, just to cover that I stupidly standing listen to duck language.

I realized Kang Yu and Leo looked alike best buddy, both of them have same height, age and also have good-looking appearance that able to stun, both of them standing together really sparkling, walking toward the parking area, both of them are enchanting countless women, perhaps those women may hitting the wall but still keep on looking at them.

I still dragging the luggage little bit embarrassing walking in line with them, I

walked slowly and I have walked and followed at their back.

Suddenly Leo turned back to see me, very politely smiled at me.

He turned in front, touching Kang Yu's shoulder, "Duck, she is very beautiful!"

I feel overwhelmed by favor, I have good impression toward him by 100%.

Although I often heard that all the foreigner like to say beautiful to the Asian girls, all are completely courtesy words.

But stills I very happy.

Mr. Leo took a glance at me again, I little bit frustrated why he looked at me again, whenever he looked at me, he would touch Kang Yu's shoulder, he looks so ambiguous, his big hands gesturing curved, "Nice Body!"

It seems that he not look at my face but his eyesight... I lower my head and looked at my own chest area.

Ugh... I dragged the luggage and screamed in heart, let the Marianas Trench goes deeper, so that be more oblivious.

Immediately I looked at Kang Yu, his face stun and dark, he also realized it.

Get into problems!

At the same time, my impression toward Mr. Leo declined by many points.

Actually, he is foreign grey wolf!

Get in to the car, Kang Yu and I sat on the passage seat at back, Mr. Leo sat on the in front seat, along the way to home, Kang Yu not said anything to me, while Leo has light conversation with Uncle Shen.

I looked similar to little cat who scratching the glass window.

The foreigner caused me trouble.

Huhuhuhuhu...

Uncle Shen sent Mr. Leo to hotel, and then he took us to home, once we arrived at Uncle Shen's house, Kang Yu still ignored me, without any better option, I went to upstairs, I put his luggage, I complaint inside my heart, I didn't intend to.

I heard Kang Yu's footsteps to upstairs, I wanted to see him, I could not quarreling with him in our first meeting, still it is always me who lower my head and admitted my fault.

He comes, he looks so stern, close the door.

I feel fear in my heart, "Does Uncle Shen takes his rest?"

"En!" he is leaning the door.

I heard the door being locked sound.

Why he closed and even locked the door, does he locked the door to hit dog... pei, pei, pei, not, hit wife, pei again... I am not his wife.

He walked slowly heading to me, I wanted to draw back, but I got caught by him, I feel little bit dizzy after he rounded me, I heavily bump to the door.

I shocked, "Kang..."

I just called his name half but he has stopped me by his mouth.

I never knew that kissing could be this intense and fierce, he seems wanted to eat me, my nose smells something, I could feel that my mouth filled with his taste, and also fire that burn my whole body, I feel like running into boiling water, at moment I forget to close my eyes, open wide my eyes, he also not close his eyes, but he glared fiercely at me, as if he purposely to do it, he sucking my tongue as if he wanted to break it, but at same time he wanted to punish me, he used his teeth to bite my lips.

I feel my whole body numb, tipsy and face burned hot, slowly become rigid, nice and warm, again I welcome him, our tongue entangled and also our hands, both of us also rubbing our clothes each other, and the kissing go more wildly.

After being kissed I almost cannot stand in steady, exhausted and then he let me go.

I touched his forehead with panting heavily. We have separated for three years, once we meet we have went wildly, toward this really huge test.

I pity seeing him.

He looked at me with unable to find a way out eyesight, sighed, but still very

strictly said to me, "You are not allowed to wear this kind of clothes!"

I hurried nodding my head, heavily nodding.

His expression changed better little bit, he started to help me to tidy up my clothes, suddenly he gazed at my chest area, his face turned be not good again, said, "Miao Miao, I have told you to stop grow up, why don't you listen to me!"

I really want to cry...

This is not something that I can control.

Unfinished, he touched his clean shaved chin, complement, "to make correction, you only can wear it while only together with me, alone!"

"....."

Chapter 24 (24.1)



Chapter 24

Part 1 (one)

Daughter in law meets mother in law

“Yan Yan, please help me, help me to makeup one reason!” I am on phone and pledging.

“No problems, you are only not sleep at home, I understand! Does brother in law bring me present? If he brings me I will help you!” I glanced at Kang Yu, he has done wash up and just right in time tidying his suitcase.

He seems to understand what I mean he takes out one beautifully wrapped gift box from his luggage. He raised it in front of me.

I glad, I gave him my thumb up, and then I spoke on the phone, “He brought it, it is one big present!”

“Ok! Rest assured, let me think...” Yan Yan’s voice sounded flattering.

“Thank you!” I feel at ease, although I am university student, but before I graduated, my mom does not allow me to be dating, but going out at night not really strict still there is time-restriction so that could not spend night outside.

But Yan Yan is smarter than me, so that she must be able to come up with something.

“Sis, I know, just said that you are back to dorm to take your note, you met Gu Ling Li who stayed at dorm and not return to her home. She is being alone spending her summer holiday, she really lonely so that you keep her accompany, how it is, very reasonable!”

“En, en!” I nodded my head.

“Well, later when you calling to home, you just tell mom this thing, it must be alright, but...” Yan Yan laughed evilly, “Sis, don’t play too overboard till takes life, you and I are different. You stills have one year to graduate!”

My face blushed, “You go to hell!”

“HeHe! I hung up, I want to watch television! Bye bye!”

After the phone hung up, I called to home, to mom who received the phone called I said exactly alike what Yan Yan told me before. My mom not doubted at me, mom even reminded me to cover myself with quilt, don't think because summer I can't catch cold.

I answered her, she still chattering for few words before hung up the phone call.

I put down my mobile phone, I feel so relieved.

"Done?" Kang Yu back hugged me.

I lifted my head up, "En, quite frighten me to death!" I patting my chest, I still lingering with fear, glancing at him, I touched his hand, "Well, where is my present?"

There is no reason for Yan Yan to have one but I don't.

A small box is immediately put inside my palm.

I have made comparison Yan Yan present is bigger than mine, "Why mine is so small?"

Kang Yu still hugged me, he did not have intention to free me, still like olden days, he spoke softly in my ear, "The weight value isn't same!"

Weight value?

My expression not looked good while opened that small box, I stunned and my eyes shining brightly, "Swarovski crystal dog pendant."

I have wanted it for long time, but the counter shop in Shanghai sells it so expensive.

"How can you know that I like this one!" I happily asked.

Kang Yu glanced at me, "As long as the thing is something related to dog, which one you don't like, which one you don't want."

As expected he knows me so well.

"So what present are you going to give to Yan Yan?" This puppy pendant is expensive, but still how expensive it is, after all talking about the weight value isn't same, it is Yan Yan's present really cannot compare to mine.

Kang Yu coughed one time, "Several free snacks that distributed by company, the German local product..."

"....."

It is such big package, but it is really an effortless present.

"You must be careful Yan Yan perhaps goes against you!" I thought the old days when he was courting me, he has spent lots of effort to win her favor.

"I don't afraid!"

I puzzled looking at him.

I see his eyes, "This time is different with the former days. After passing the bridge it is time to burn it!"

"....."

Black heart alien, although in human form he still not changed.

So scary!

"Miao Miao, it almost two o'clock in the morning, let's go to sleep!" suddenly he spoke so soft to my ears.

My face red, my heart pounding nervously, "Al...right...I go...to have wash!"

I lower my head, I walked toward the bathroom, I locked the door, I squatted at the floor, my face burn hot and red, I stayed and spending night with him not for making love with him, absolutely not, we have been separated for three years, I just wanted to spend more time with him, accompany him.

He... might not have that kind of... thought.

If....

My face blushed and started to fume.

"Miao Miao, you wear my pajamas, can you?" Kang Yu is knocking the door.

"Oh, Alright!" I opened the door, I took the pajamas from his hand and then faster closed the door, I almost clasp his hand.

I shouldn't think nonsense, Kang Yu won't.

I hurried swirl the head of tap and take my bath, I don't understand what

happen but my body is burning hot, I take bath with cold water.

Although I am taking bath with cold water, it cannot help me to clean my illicit imagination.

I squatted again in floor, touched my face, and crazily pulled my hair.

Arghhhhhhhh!

Ou Yang Miao Miao, you are pig-head!

I took bath for half hour, after I done taking bath, I am not dare to going out directly, I am pacing back and forth inside the bathroom, I thought how to face Kang Yu.

Don't... don't want to think about it.

Again I have thought, perhaps I might directly jump down from the bathroom's window, and then go home.

I am not underage anymore, I can... do that!"

And then suddenly I recalled my mind, have I bathed clean myself? Or not?

My mind is in mess, I undressed myself, and washed myself again.

I cleaned myself carefully and smell nicely, and then gathered my courage, opened the bathroom door, lower down my head, walking step by step to the bed.

"Have you done?" I raised my head when I heard Kang Yu's voice.

"En!" nervous, I not dare to look at him.

"Come here, sit down, I blow dry your hair!" he pulled me to sit on chair.

The hair dryer sound makes me to stop my wild mind for moment.

After Kang Yu helped me blowing dry my hair, he asked, "Miao Miao, you sleep inside or outside!"

"Ah?" I regained myself.

"Sleep inside or outside?" Kang Yu has already in bed.

I looked at the bed that lean against the wall, out of the blue I felt as if he is seducing me.

I take looked carefully this bed, no matter how I see it, it feels so small.

“Miao Miao?” Kang Yu asked me again.

“Oh, in... not, outside!” outside is easier to escape.

He sleeps inside while leaving outside for me, I swallowed my saliva, looked alike robot, I walked to the bed, gulped down my saliva, climb...climb to the bed.

I lay down in the bed, I don’t even dare to speak, directly closed my eyes.

Sleeping is the most secure.

I can feel Kang Yu who sleeps beside me come near, my heart tighten and beat crazily.

My mind filled with—come, come, come!

But there is no movement from Kang Yu.

I nervously opened my eyes, looked at my sides.

He after all is sleeping back to my back.

I almost go crazy.

What situation is it?

I cannot help myself, I tugged him, “Yu, are you sleep?”

“En!” He used nasal sound to answer me.

I really don’t know, should I feel disappointed or relieved. Maybe this is because my first time sharing bed with him.

Well, I admitted I little bit disappointed.

I little bit angry and closed my eyes, but because I cannot sleep, no way out, I tugged him again, “Yu, I cannot sleep, we chat.”

Kang Yu silent for moment and answered, “Does not want to chat!”

“Let we chat, I am so boring, just tell me how your training was during in German.” I not gave up tugged him again.

24.2

Chapter 24

Part 2 (Two)

Daughter in law meets mother in law

Probably because I disturb him so he lost his patience, raised, he turned and glared at me.

My heart little bit fear, what's with him?

He is scratching his head, he messed his hair but somewhat I feel he looks so sexy.

"I want you chat with me, does it really hard?"

His eyes flames up, "Miao Miao, you really overboard, I am normal man, beside me is laying down a woman that I love, mine only covered with quilt but only purely to have simple chat, it really harm my self-pride."

Ugh... no matter what this word sound little bit awkward?

But have deep thought....

My face suddenly turned red, this mean... he also... have that intention.

I tugging his sleeves, whispered, "I don't say that I not willing to let you to make..."

He even strictly refused, "Cannot!"

I dumbfounded, I have sent off myself in front the door, but he said cannot, he even said that I have harmed his self-pride, but he also harmed my self-pride even more.

"I have principle that kind of thing must be doing after marriage!"

My eyes bulged glaring at him, woah, in this era still has someone honorable like him, and moreover fate let me to encounter him.

"So that go to sleep, no chatting, don't harm my self-pride or else I will go without end with you!" he said, and back me again.

I am speechless, stupidly looking at his wide-broad back.

Tearing...

Sleep, sleep, he let me to sleep, why mustn't I sleep.

I throw my tantrum also back him, close my eyes.

Not long after that, Kang Yu raised, tugged me, "Miao Miao..."

I shrugged, not in good mood, said, "What!"

He upset said, "You sleep at my side, I cannot sleep!"

"....."

I ignore him, pretended to sleep, I have gave you opportunity but you were not cherish it.

Humph!

**

Early in the second day, when I have slept soundly with Kang Yu, I really didn't know that Uncle Shen has bought donut and soy milk happily and went upstairs, once the door opened, he saw both of us sleeping together and Kang Yu cuddling me.

Clang—sounded, the soy milk felt to the floor.

Kang Yu and I awake because the noise, gently rub the eyes seeing the shocking expression of Uncle Shen.

"Both of you..." Uncle Shen fingers trembling pointing at us, gasping his breathe.

I guessed because he witness Kang Yu and I have dating since we were so young, so that his memory stopped at that moment and forget that we are already adult, although he quite open-minded, he even taught Kang Yu something adult do but still there is some limit for that, so that he surprised to see Kang Yu and I sleep together, his memory quite chaos, paused for moment!

I merely realized, Kang Yu also understood, "Miao Miao and I are adult!"

Finally Uncle Shen regained himself, his face red, he moved backward, he apologized, "Both of you sleep, go to sleep, keep on continuing, just continue!"

He hurried close the door, faster running downstairs.

Continue what, both of us not even making love.

Pissed off one's self to death.

I uncovered the quilt, wake up, I brushed my teeth using his toothbrush, venting my anger with toothbrush, and then wash my face, changed my clothes.

When I out from bathroom, I glared at Kang Yu, turned my head, grabbed Yan Yan's present and mine, directly go home.

When I arrived at home, inside Yan Yan's room—screaming, and followed by her quick footsteps sound.

"Sis, don't you bring the person come?" she bitterly said.

"What?"

"You see, you see, what are all of these?" she took one of the snack bag that I brought home.

"Don't you like to eat, doesn't snack is good, it is imported, very expensive ones!" although I pissed off but still I put good words for Kang Yu.

"Expensive?" Yan Yan is fumed in rage, "He is clearly wanted to burn the bridge after used it! You see, what is written in the package?" she pointed at the snack left corner which written in English.

It translated—Special made for the airplane meal.

Compare to say it is distributed freely by the company--even pitted!

I feel three black lines in my head...

This trick, destroying the bridge after crossing the river is already crossing until grandma's house.

Kang Yu is really black, to get worse and worse.

**

Early in the second day, when I have slept soundly with Kang Yu, I really didn't know that Uncle Shen has bought donut and soy milk happily and went upstairs, once the door opened, he saw both of us sleeping together and Kang Yu cuddling

me.

Clang—sounded, the soy milk felt to the floor.

Kang Yu and I awake because the noise, gently rub the eyes seeing the shocking expression of Uncle Shen.

“Both of you...” Uncle Shen fingers trembling pointing at us, gasping his breathe.

I guessed because he witness Kang Yu and I have dating since we were so young, so that his memory stopped at that moment and forgot that we are already adult, although he quite open-minded, he even taught Kang Yu something adult do but still there is some limit for that, so that he surprised to see Kang Yu and I sleep together, his memory quite chaos, paused for moment!

I merely realized, Kang Yu also understood, “Miao Miao and I are adult!”

Finally Uncle Shen regained himself, his face red, he moved backward, he apologized, “Both of you sleep, go to sleep, keep on continuing, just continue!”

He hurried close the door, faster running downstairs.

Continue what, both of us not even making love.

Pissed off one's self to death.

I uncovered the quilt, wake up, I brushed my teeth using his toothbrush, venting my anger with toothbrush, and then wash my face, changed my clothes.

When I out from bathroom, I glared at Kang Yu, turned my head, grabbed Yan Yan's present and mine, directly go home.

When I arrived at home, inside Yan Yan's room—screaming, and followed by her quick footsteps sound.

“Sis, don't you bring the person come?” she bitterly said.

“What?”

“You see, you see, what are all of these?” she took one of the snack bag that I brought home.

“Don't you like to eat, doesn't snack is good, it is imported, very expensive ones!” although I pissed off but still I put good words for Kang Yu.

"Expensive?" Yan Yan is fumed in rage, "He is clearly wanted to burn the bridge after used it! You see, what is written in the package?" she pointed at the snack left corner which written in English.

It translated—Special made for the airplane meal.

Compare to say it is distributed freely by the company--even pitied!

I feel three black lines in my head...

This trick, destroying the bridge after crossing the river is already crossing until grandma's house.

Kang Yu is really black, to get worse and worse.

**

On the end of July, I went to university, I was specially invited Ling Li who rushed came back from her home to meet Kang Yu, naturally Liao Jia Ying and Sun Ling also joined, conveniently said hello to Ling Li, the new semester will be started soon, when my mom came to send me clean clothes, she asked her why didn't she go home during summer holiday, I hope she won't get exposed.

I ambiguously glanced at her, evident nodding head.

Sun Ling and Jia Ying even forced to ask me, how I feel?

I stunned and felt hot, I chased them away, to explain clear between Kang Yu and me, both of us are innocent.

But it is only make thing worse, it similar to the gossip during my high school, they not believed on me.

TM! In this world people thought really wicked.

Although Kang Yu is only internship pilot, but since he joined the training he has already had salary, so that he treated Ling Li and fellows to Yan An west district Ling Shuang Ge restaurant to have meal, this restaurant quite expensive, very decorative private room, a Chinese food type restaurant, there is few of cuisine that particularly I like.

Ling Li ate this meal with drooling, she asked few questions to Kang Yu, she even asked him what were we did on the night we together the day that I lied,

she asked everything.

Kang Yu replied her vaguely and that made me angry as if drinking sour plum juice.

A group of women chattering endless, Kang Yu not showed his impatient expression, from the beginning until the last, his expression really gentleman, very polite, he even prepared present for three of them.

It was better compare to Yan Yan's.

I have premonition about this meal, all of them are turn into Kang Yu's servant.

The dinner spent three hours, all of them are satisfied going back.

24.3

Chapter 24

Part 3 (Three)

Daughter in law meets mother in law

Kang Yu sent me back to home and the vehicle is not longer bike. When he returned back to China the first thing he did buying 1.8T Volkswagen Passat* automobile for Uncle Shen in order to pay gratitude to him and also for the future convenient.

Volkswagen Passat automobile car produced originally from German.

His car license is overseas one, for moment he still can used it. He prepared to take the examination test next month for the China's car license.

"Miao Miao, do you want to travel with me?" he is reversing the car direction.

"Travel?"

"En, the end of August I will start my internship as pilot, you are also starting new semester, since you are still in your summer holiday, we go for travelling since we never went traveling alone, both of us!"

I thought it is right too, we are dating almost 7 seven years, we never had traveling by ourselves before, other than the spring travel when we were still in school.

"It is okay but I really don't know how to tell my mother."

He smiled, "Rest assured, your three dorm mates will help you!"

As expected, whatever he did always had the reason.

He obviously knew that Yan Yan as his bridge could not help much so that he had prepared other convenient bridge to used.

I sighed, if not because I haven't graduated, my mom is not allowing me to dating or else I might let him to meet my parent, why must we have backstreet relationship.

Even though, I not sure my mom obstacle he can pass or not.

“Okay, you planed!” I answered him.

**

I have agreed, but when the airplane landed on Fu Shun airport, get on taxi, Kang Yu said that we are going to meet his mother, I started to regret it.

“I don’t want, let me go, Taxi Driver uncle, stop the car!” I keep on hitting the taxi’s window, I haven’t had heart preparation.

“Miao Miao!” he caught my hands.

“You! You! Bastard, you said that we come here for traveling, then I agreed but you never told me we are going to meet your mother!” you kidding me, I wear sport outfit, I haven’t manage my hair, going to meet his mother, didn’t it mean go to die.

“Going for traveling is one thing, while meeting my mom is another thing.” He said as if it as been already expected.

“No, you didn’t tell me like this, you only told me go for traveling, only this!” he not even mentioned about the place, the ticket was booked by him, even he was the one who did the check in, I only followed at his back, when arrived inside the airplane, he even said afraid this was my first time sat on airplane, he even especially bought me three travelling treasure—earphone, inflatable headrest, eye mask, to make me more comfortable while I was so muddle headed to follow on him.

When we arrived at airport, I just found out, I went to Fu Shun.

His hometown!

This bastard, it is okay if he blacken and scheming others but why must he scheming me too.

I am his future wife.

“If I not telling you like that, would you follow me go to airport?” he glared fiercely to me.

Ugh...

Fine, I admitted, if he really told me that we would go to his mother’s house, I

really won't come because I feel afraid little bit.

But...I have came, I even more afraid.

I afraid until I want to cry.

Kang Yu patting my back, he started to coax me, "Miao Miao, my mom is someone nice, you don't need to be afraid, she won't eat you, meet you, she will so happy!"

My pair of eyes is moistened with tears, how can I not afraid.

In this world there is one of the hardest relationships to get along and it is in law-relationship (Mother in law and daughter in law).

"I don't want! I don't want!" I am hysterical screamed.

Kang Yu let me be, he just asked the driver uncle to locked the car, let him to drive the car while I making noise by myself.

The car moving along the way, I don't know where I have been, when I have tired, the taxi stopped, Kang Yu paid the taxi and dragged me off.

I have thought that I have been to this step and there is no use to escape, seeing his empty hand, I nervously asked, "Don't you come to meet your mother, why aren't you taking something!"

"My mother is not lacking anything."

"You not buying, at least you tell me, I go to buy, how could us go with empty hand, so embarrassing!" I dragged on his hand to stop him from moving forward.

He gently caressing my face, "you are the best present, my mother will be happier to meet you compare to mountain of gold or silver!"

"Really? Do you really think so?" I really feel insecure.

"Really, I don't lie to you! Let's go, during this time my mother must be joining the elderly activity such as singing!" he leading me into small district.

The neighborhood is so brand new, the green plants really looks good, the path to walk is so smooth and arrange in line with fitness equipment, the design of the residential building is painted with green and white color, on both side is altar made from flower, so beautiful. The passageway entrance door combine

with iron crafts are very new.

This is China second tier (second city level) residential area! I feel this place is much better compare to place where I live.

Kang Yu is leading me heading to activity center, after arrived, I standing in front of the entrance, my feet is trembling.

Suddenly there is big aunty who looking at me and Kang Yu from the entrance door, she shouting to the inside door, “Old Fu Jin, see who is coming!”

Old Fu Jin?

“You are Young Fu Jin, of course my mom is Old Fu Jin!” Kang Yu explained, “Everyone who living in here, they are having their own nickname!”

So he means that Old Fu Jin is his mother.

My feet wobbling even more.

“Who is coming?” I heard someone with gentle voice calling.

“Mom!” Kang Yu loosens my hand, go and greet.

“Yu Er!” that gentle voice raised few octaves, with sobbing tone welcoming.

“Mom, how is your health?” Kang Yu who is higher by one head to his mother, hug her with both of his hands.

“Good. Very good, have proper meal, proper sleep, let mom to take look of you!” she tiptoe, both of her hands are randomly touching Kang Yu’s face, “Grow taller, build stronger, you coming here not even notice mom, see what time it is now, almost four afternoon, let we go home, mom goes to market to buy vegetable, cook dumpling for you.”

“Mom, don’t be busy, we go to restaurant to have meal later.”

“That is too wasting, very fast, it not big deal, Aunty Zhang, my son is coming, I don’t dance anymore, you guys dance.” Kang Yu’s mom is speaking quite loud from door, it can see that his mom has healthy body.

“Old Fu Jin, what are you busy, see behind your son is your little daughter in law?” Aunty Zhang has tall and sturdy body, her voice even louder.

Little daughter in law is refer to me.

I keep on lowering my head, a time I take few glances to Kang Yu and his mother, it because Kang Yu is too tall and well-build, he blocked my eyesight, I don't even have time to see proper my future mother in law.

Listen, Kang Yu's mother immediately stretch her head to look at me.

Our eyes are meeting finally I know why Kang Yu has very good looking appearance, simply to say he is really his mother's son. His mother perhaps is one of the most beautiful middle age women that I ever seen.

What is called as the aging woman is still looks attractive, what old person who dresses up as teenager, what is called as gentle quiet and composed character, all are in his mom.

Kang Yu did say his mother's background is farmer.

Not because I look down farmer, but his mother completely not have farmer's aura. If we were really in dynasty era, his mother really one Old Fu Jin.

Kang Yu's mom seeing me, her eyes is gleaming brightly, as if I am priceless unique treasure.

"Mom, she is..." Kang Yu wants to introduce, but his mother has opened her mouth.

"I know, I know, every year you are always sending me her photo, I recognized her, recognized her, Ou Yang Miao Miao, she is my future daughter in law!"

I almost get choke with my saliva.

24.4

Chapter 24

Part 4 (Four)

Daughter in law meets mother in law

Kang Yu's mom comes quickly heading to my side, she grabbed my hand and patted it, "See this girl grows round alike pearl, really beautiful ah!" after said, she turned her back and shout loud to Aunty Zhang, "you say she is!"

Aunty Zhang coming closer, she looks at me, "She is, really grows to be someone prosperous!"

Again I got choke by my saliva.

Am I get time traveling or not!

The entrance in activity hall suddenly crowded, maybe because Aunty Zhang loud voice that attracting people to come, all people are looking at me.

"Isn't she Shanghainese girl, how can she looks not same!"

"I see she is more alike our Dong Bei's girl!"

"How can you know?" someone asked.

"Only looking at her body posture, you see her butt!"

Butt!!

What with my butt, I nervous!

"She absolutely can born son!"

I cough, choking with saliva.

Aunties, I really not believe if there is no Dong Bei's girl who don't have thin butt, Ling Li is thin only covered by skin, moreover, inside my university most of the fellow students, normally those who come from Dong Bei are having tall posture, one by one is growing so alluring.

What kind of people they are.

"Why are you coughing? The Southern girl has weak body!" one of the aunty

said.

I really shocked by them, one by one of them are looking me as if I am animal in zoo, I got shock until coughing.

“Don’t fright her, my Kang Yu takes very long time and difficult in order to wooing her, don’t scare and make her running away!”

Still coughing, keeps on coughing!

“Yu Er, hurry, bring daughter in law to home, I go to buy vegetable cook dumpling for you guys!”

“Mom, have said, no need to be busy, when the luggage put at home, we go to restaurant to have meal!” Kang Yu stopped his mom and also holding my hand, taking our heavy bags.

When arrived at home, this is really my first time come to his house.

The house not big, two rooms one living room, but the decoration really interesting and appealing, Kang Yu seems afraid I feel hot, he hurries turned on the air conditioner, not long after that he pour drink for me, cut fruit.

Suddenly I feel touched the Northern people are so passionate.

I sit down in sofa, not that nervous as before, I remember I haven’t gave my greeting.

At the moment don’t know how to call his mother.

I tug Kang Yu, “What should I call your mom?”

Kang Yu eyes rolled, “How I call my mom?”

I rolled my eyes to him, “Mom ah!”

After said, Kang Yu calls loud, “Mom, Miao Miao calls you!”

His mother just finished serving the fruit, excitedly looked at me, “Heh? I... I don’t hear ah!”

“Miao Miao, say one more time!” Kang Yu urged me.

I dumbfounded, I haven’t married with him.

“Soon or later you must call, now is the time to practice for familiarize it.”

Kang Yu whispered to me.

My face red, while looking with huge expectation for the future mother in law, shyly called, "Mom!"

"Aiya!" His mom is so happily answered me, "Good girl, hurry, eat the fruit, eat fruit!"

Night...

Kang Yu brings me and his mom to one of the famous restaurant to have meal, the restaurant has Manchu* characteristics, but the Menu quite surprising me.

满 *Man* 族 *Zu* :*The Man tribe (also the minority ethnic in China) or part of Manchuria, the region now is referred to as Northeast China.*

What Nu Er Ha Chi Golden Meat*, what Qian Long Spinach Tofu*, what Ci Xi Little head*, somewhat I feel this is not cuisine names but more alike eating people!

努 *Nu* 尔 *Er* 哈 *Ha* 赤 *Chi* :*Nu Er Ha Chi (Nurhaci) is the first Khan, founder of Manchu (Jin dynasty)* 乾 *Qian* 隆 *Long* :*Emperor Qian Long is the sixth Qing emperor in China* 慈 *Ci* 禧 *Xi* :*Empress Dowager Ci Xi the Manchu Yehenara clan, was a Chinese empress dowager and regent who effectively controlled the Chinese government in the late Qing dynasty for 47 years from 1861 until her death in 1908*

Kang Yu ordered few sticky and paste dishes, he said most of the Manchurian likes to eat, also ordered something named Dian Mao Zi (sticky mouse) which is wild red basil leaf steam bun and also steam bean paste bun.

At last he also ordered soup that named—The best soup in the world.

I really curious what kind of soup that even named as the best soup in the world.

When the soup is served, I dumbstruck.

It is carrot and radish soup!

I coughed again.

Chapter 25 (25.1)



The ending is coming nearer. This chapter is one heart-warming and touching.

Chapter 25

Part 1 (One)

Long Way to Purpose

Kang Yu And I were staying at Fu Shun for ten days, I have played in Chao Tian district, when the time to leave, my future mother in law was sobbing, her tears, I could understand the feeling son not stay close with her, when the airplane took off, I have asked Kang Yu why didn't he bring his mother to live in Shanghai, living together with him.

Today is not same with the past days, he is not that poor student who freeloader in others house.

Kang Yu said, she has been living in Fu Shun for almost her life time, she has get used with the living environment, friends in Fu Shun, if really ask her to live in Shanghai, she perhaps would not get used, she even does not have any friend, for her who has aged, it will only make her unhappy. Moreover the air in Shanghai not really good compare to the Northern, especially during winter, if there is no heater, it can freeze to death, he afraid she won't endure it.

After I think for while, I agreed. She is not youngster who have faster adapting ability to the new environment.

But, I could feel during bid good bye, Kang Yu was sadder compare to his mother.

I leaning on his shoulder, I gripped his hands and said, "Yu, later every year I will come with you to visit your mom, if you don't have time, I can come alone!"

Kang Yu really get touched, he gripped back my hand, said, "She is not only my mother but also your mother!"

I smiled, he really did not need to remind in very vague way my heart has belong to him for long time ago.

The airplane is flying in the sky, maybe because playing too much so exhausted, I feel want to sleeping, I get closer to his shoulder.

“Miao Miao!”

“En?” my eyes dazing answered him.

“Waiting after your graduation, we will get married, okay?”

Immediately I awake, I lift my head up looking at him, I can see his serious eyesight, if I say yes, he might give me his life.

I get closer to his shoulder and I hold tight his hand, “Okay.”

**

25.2

Chapter 25

Part 2 (Two)

Long Way to Purpose

When we were arrived at Shanghai, Kang Yu was getting busy, his assignment most of time was long-term flight for the International Mission. There was few places that I never heard before, I was also busier than him, because I was in last year in university, not only busy for the papers, but also for the internship list, I busy until I felt had big head, both of our time was could not chance on each others, our meeting day was getting lesser and lesser.

So very thankful to the technology development, we still could depend on MSN, QQ, video web, chatting, asking each other days.

When I got headache for my papers, Yan Yan finally got work called after she sent 350 resumes, she got job, although the salary not high, at least better off than staying at home. She seemed to be happy working as white collar, the usage of book really not much, when Yan Yan entered into the society she just found out that education and experiences really important, thus it was the standard for working, she enrolled for the undergraduate, also enrolled for the English course, her life seems to be fulfilling.

The fourth year in my last semester, Kang Yu half saving was deposit plus loan to buy house, one room one living room, not big, but it has good location, since Uncle Shen not busy he spent his time doing the renovation.

The renovation was so simple, because Kang Yu stayed at his company dorm, and sometimes he stayed at Uncle Shen's house, thus he renting his house, he used the renting money to pay the house loan as additional his salary was paid quite high, less than half year, his loan had paid fully.

I also graduated smoothly.

9 July 2003, it was my graduation ceremony, Kang Yu has flight to Paris so he could not join my graduation ceremony, but he had made phone call early in the morning to me, he also specially let the flower shop to deliver one big bouquet red roses, more or less to make up for my regret.

My father and mother seeing me wearing the scholar cap, the scholar gown, simply happy in tears, Yan Yan was holding the camera, she crazily helped to take the pictures of me, finally she found Ling Li, helped us to take family portrait.

After the graduation ceremonial ended, I went home with all those people who would not stay in Shanghai, or they might go to other city to develop, we all hugged together and crying.

Together for four years, the time to separate together finally realized the interaction between people to people was something quite short.

At the same time, all my fellow good sisters and I were also graduated, so that we were made appointment to reunite.

Pity, on that day Kang Yu could not join us because he has flight to German.

I am type of sensible girl, I knew currently this time was one most important time for Kang Yu's career. I completely could understand his business, hence he said waiting until I done with my graduation we would talk about our marriage, I have remembered on my heart, but it was not something urgent because I trusted him.

I looking for job while waiting for him, there was a time I threw tantrum to him, acting coquettishly, arguing, but I trust him would not blame on me.

The most troublesome, my mom was starting to help me and Yan Yan to find boyfriend.

This is also one of common problem for most parents, during in the school not allowed children to date, but once graduated they hope their children to have partner and married.

How thing could be that easy.

After my graduation, there was countless time I wanted to tell my mom, I already have boyfriend, even already talking about marriage, but seeing the way my mom choosing those people who must Shanghainese, if not Master student at least university graduated.

I have cold sweat because worried of Kang Yu.

I didn't want to beat the bushes, I kept on hiding it, waiting until Kang Yu came

back, both of us would plan for it.

But weather couldn't be forecasted, people have their own luck, when Kang Yu had his off days, it was the day when Uncle Shen was taking to hospital he was diagnosed to have Liver Cancer late level. Both of Kang Yu and I didn't have time to talk about our marriage matters, we were busying to taking care him.

Uncle Shen didn't have children, his relatives were in overseas, and naturally it was Kang Yu who responsible took care of him.

Human is like this, when doesn't know anything people can live very good, but once knowing to get terminal illness, alike the plant in dessert, no matter how refreshing it still will wither quickly.

But this four months, the New Year was not coming yet, Uncle Shen has left human world forever.

I never seen Kang Yu crying before, moreover I never thought a man could cry to the point so deeply hurt, he has looked Uncle Shen as his own father, actually he has planned to buy one big house, when I married to him, Uncle Shen would live with us together.

I understood, I have more empathy, this Old-Urchin who called as Uncle, he was one of biggest regret in Kang Yu life. Because he was one of the chosen person who would be our marriage witness.

The funeral service was held in Long Hua funeral home, chose a small room, the people was not many, the ceremony was simple, many of Uncle Shen's friends were coming, the coffin was personally closed by Kang Yu and also he was the person who sent Uncle Shen to the crematorium, moreover he also the first person who took the ashes and put in funerary casket.

That day when holding Uncle Shen funeral, sky was gloomy, as if the heaven also cried. Kang Yu bought the graveyard in Mountain Tian Ma cemetery, Song Jiang district, Shanghai. He knew that Uncle Shen liked high places, so that he especially selected the graveyard in the top mountain.

He personally put the ashes into the tomb, his eyes was red, he looking at the cement tomb when it sealed. The Master asked what to carve in the gravestone, "What should be written?"

Kang Yu said, "My late Father Shen Bo Song! Godson Kang Yu."

The master nodded, he started to crave it, Kang Yu kept on staring at the tombstone, he didn't move.

I knew whatever I said might useless, so that I only could accompany him in silent, finally he could not brace it anymore, he turned back and hugged me, crying loudly.

He has cried for so long, perhaps it was the longest and the most tear that ever flowing down from his eyes.

I did feel bitter in my heart and followed him crying.

Waiting for the Master to crave each word with golden paint, Kang Yu finally calmed down, but he didn't let my hand off.

"Mr, please take a look, is it okay, if everything is okay, we will set up the gravestone!"

Kang Yu nodded, but I said, "Master, wait a minute, please added few words!"

Kang Yu looked at me with confusion, "Miao Miao?"

I said to the Master, "Please to add—Goddaughter in law Ou Yang Miao Miao!"

Kang Yu mood was stirring, shaking, "Miao Miao!"

I held tight his hand, "Although he can't be witness in our marriage, but the person who set up the grave stone is you and I! It's just same!"

Kang Yu hugged me tight and I sobbing again, but that time was sobbing in happiness.

After done with Uncle Shen matters, Kang Yu off days were ended, he also starting to be busy again, because of Uncle Shen matter, both of us didn't have mood in talking about our marriage, and then after that was new year, maybe because Uncle Shen's death, Kang Yu was more missing his mother in Fu Shun, when new year, Kang Yu especially flied to Fu Shun...

Naturally I didn't have way to follow him because I must spend the New Year at home.

25.3

Chapter 25

Part 3 (Three)

Long Way to Purpose

Time— it flies again.

The year of 2004 was coming, I grew older by one year again, during New Year I had several phone calls with Kang Yu, he said that he would be back after the lantern festival, he also said to me to take good care myself, while others thing he didn't mentioned.

14 February that day, I was quite frustrating because Kang Yu didn't phone me, also there were no roses like he used to do, suddenly my mom came to my room, she took a dress and put it in front of me.

"Mom, what are you doing?" I was block by the dress, could not see anything.

"Wear this dresses, go with me to blind date!" My mom was holding my hand, dragging me.

"Blind date, what blind date!" Your daughter has already had owner, it was only you who didn't know about it.

"Don't say that you won't go, I tell you, today if you does not want to go still must go, the other party has very good qualification, if you don't go, you will miss this opportunity, do you understand!" after done wearing the dresses, My mom took the comb and helped me to comb my hair.

"You go to look for Yan Yan!" I was so shameless to push it to my little sister.

"That little pig, she also same as you, once she heard about going to blind dating, she hurried wearing her high heels and running away!"

I have cold sweat, I still late by one stepped!

"Aiyo mom, please be gentler, you might pull my scalp!" I covered my head.

My mom had steel her heart to send me for blind dating, afraid I would run away, she had locked the door, and then, she took out her makeup, she was starting to do makeup in my face.

"Don't think because you are still young so you thought there is no urgency dating, I let you two go to school earlier by one year because I don't want both of you wasting time, I want both of you get married earlier, your father and me will feel at ease!"

I have cold sweat again, so my mom had been plotting it since we were kids.

After applying the makeup, I was dragging by mom out from the room, prepared to go out, I really wanted to escape, but I could not find any chance for it.

Ding Dong! Ding Dong!

At that time the door bell was ringing, I was so excited and screaming, "Mom, there is guest, guest!"

Lai Xi which it kept on veranda, hearing my voice it also followed to bark.

Inside my heart I kept on chanting no matter who you were, I really felt greatly thank you, as long as you able to distract my mom, I would pray burning an incense stick for you every days three times.

My mother opened the door, "Who... are you?"

I was following to look at the door way, at the moment I felt my eyes would go out.

"Aunty, I am Kang Yu, Miao Miao's boyfriend!"

I was alike cat which its tail being stepped and an instantly I jumped out.

How could he come, didn't he say that he would be back on lantern festival? And also, why did he come to my house?

After my mother heard, at sudden she roaring, "Ou Yang Miao Miao, you give me an explanation!"

I was stammering, "He... he is my boyfriend."

"When did you dating and have boyfriend, how could I don't know!" My mom was alike witches in this situation.

I thought in my heart, if I let you knew from the start perhaps I would be cut into pieces with Kang Yu by you.

"Mom, you don't be angry, let him get in first?" at least those who coming is guest.

My mom restrained herself, opened the door, "You come in!"

Kang Yu took off his shoes, wore the home-sandals given by me, he was bringing small and big bags when entering the house, mother was going to kitchen to bring out tea, while I immediately rushed to him, whispering, "Why are you coming? And then, what your purpose is."

I felt to get sudden heart-attack and I really didn't have mental preparation!

"Come to propose!" he composed when said it.

If not because I was inside the house, my face might burn red because shy, but now... I was too worried till my face burn red.

"Miao Miao, I am sorry, I have taking too much time!" he put down all his bringing, apologizing and caressed my face, "It is the right time, anyway I have come now, perhaps time to let everything out, your mom must know it now!"

This word wasn't wrong but I didn't have confident.

My mom was going out from the kitchen, both of us separated, I dragged Kang Yu to sit in sofa, seeing him brought too many small and big bags, I hurried put all those things at the noticeable place, this things more than enough to add points.

All were Mom favorites.

"What is your name?" Mom put down the tea, she immediately asking him, ignoring the presents even she saw it.

"Kang Yu!"

"Age!"

"Born in monkey year, 24 years old."

"Education?"

"Graduated Senior High School!"

My mom's face expression had changed somewhat, I did so nervous and my heart alike jumping out.

“Where are you come from?”

“Liao Ning Fu Shun.”

My mom face was darkening compare to just now.

“Occupation?”

“Internship Pilot!”

My mom face’s color changed pale, inside my heart I secretly swearing, you are stupid, couldn’t you cut off the words of internship.

25.4



The novel is coming nearer to the end. the story is so fluffy and I like this chapter although every chapters have added and wrote in very light and also humor ways. Finally Miao Miao and Kang Yu married.

enjoy your reading

Chapter 25

Part 4 (Four)

Long Way to Purpose

Suddenly, my mom looked at me.

“Miao Miao, why he comes here?”

See, my mom has disdained Kang Yu after their short conversation.

“Marry and to propose for marriage!” Kang Yu was more composed compare to me, I didn’t even dare to answer, so he directly helped me to answer.

Mom face was turning scarier, as if the corpse that awake and live again.

Kang Yu was looking so composed and even look face to face with mom, but mom was completely silent.

Suddenly I could feel a bomb that prepared to explode, the whole world would be swept by storm.

After three minutes, my mom broke the silent and said, “I don’t agree!”

Actually I have made self-preparation, my mom would say this kind of words, but during the time when I heard it, I felt exploded inside my heart and unhappy.

“Why?”

“Why? You dare to ask me the reason why, I have chosen your blind date candidates, are those from them who could not compare to him, doesn’t have education background, the registered resident in Shanghai, even his occupation only internship, you like him, how’s your future? What you like from him? Growing up handsome, or because he is taller!”

I was flaming up, even though she is my mother, I really could not accept she looking down Kang Yu.

“What is bad about him, does not have education background, so what,

doesn't have resident permit in Shanghai, so what, he is internship pilot, his future will be bright after he gets the license, I like him, I want to marry with him, so what!"

My mom was angry and pointing at me, "Rebel, rebel, you are rebelling!"

"Mom, the education can't represent anything, the resident permit also can't represent anything, for me, he treats me so good, you think your daughter qualification is so good, must have high education level, must Master student, must Shanghainese, you are not thinking, what all of these represents, can these things represent that person will treat me good!"

I stood up, I walked in front of Kang Yu, I held tight his hand, I steady turned my head, "Mom, no matter whether you agree or not, I only want to marry to him, although in the future his heart might change, although he would dump me, I only want to marry to him!"

Kang Yu showed kind of emotions, but after he heard my last sentences, he furrowed and used more strength to hold my hand.

I glared at him, things had turned like this, he still had mood to point out my wrong.

"You..." maybe I never said something like that before, my mom was fuming with rage.

During the time, Yan Yan was coming home, once she entered the house she saw mom alike someone who just ate explosion powders, and saw at Kang Yu, stunned a moment and finally understood.

My mom as if seeing supporters, she pulled Yan Yan's hand: "Hurry helps me to persuade your older sister, what kind of person she look for, why must someone not from shanghai and does not have education!"

She didn't know that Yan Yan and Kang Yu had known each others for long time.

"Mom, to be honest, you better gives up, my sister won't listen to you, they have been dating for 9 years already,
you do think they just start dating!"

This word made mom shocked to screaming, “What! Nine years!”

I rolled my eyes to Yan Yan, she was adding oil in flaming fire, it seemed that she still bearing the grudge toward Kang Yu who had cut the bridge.

“Yes, My sister and Kang Yu was starting dating since both of them were in Junior High School, it was you who didn’t know!” Yan Yan was simply telling the truth to expose me.

“You... You take bad influence to my daughter!” my mom suddenly rushed and scolding in front of Kang Yu.

I was faster compare to her—I blocked her stepped and face in front of her.

“Miao Miao, how many things that you hide from me, after all you are not learning good things since you were kid, you even dare to have puppy love!”

I lifted my head up, after all everything was opened up, there was nothing I should hide anymore, “Yes, I had puppy love, but he does not give bad influence to me, didn’t I also graduate from Senior High School and also University?”

Yan Yan also said, “That’s it. Senior High School was the best in region, University was the best in country, this is far better off compare to me who does not have puppy love, she really better off.”

Mom seemed to be muted, I felt touching for Yan Yan, she really is my little sister.

“Mom, I tell you, if not during the Junior high School he taught me English, helped me to made guessed for the test, your daughter not even can step her foot in Shi San Nv High School, during the Senior High School, he was also the person who helped me to do the revision, he also the person who helped me for the university entrance examination, if not because of him, your daughter would not even able to step foot in university.” After I said, it was so clear that I added to much seasoning at my last sentences, at this time, I must do it.

Mom still muted.

At this time, father was going home, finally the family was completed.

“What is happened?” Father could sense something weird with the atmosphere, his eyesight spotted on Kang Yu, “Who is this brat?”

“My sister’s boyfriend!” Yan Yan answered.

Father was surprised, when he was wearing home-sandals his feet suddenly rigid in mid air.

“Miao Miao, when are you dating and having boyfriend?” Father showed surprised expression but also sour.

Maybe this is because every parents feeling when they knowing their daughter is dating and having boyfriend, they showed this kind of expression.

“You shut up!” Mom was so angry, she looked at father.

Father felt little bit hostile, roared by mom, immediately he shrugged, “What is happened? Who make you angry?”

“Still whom, this is because of your precious daughter!”

“Yan Yan, you are making your mom angry again.” Father on purpose to distract and made Yan Yan as target.

“Dad, nothing to do with me, I didn’t do anything, it was sister, mom has opinion regarding her boyfriend! She pouted her mouth.

Who asked her to be trouble maker since she was kid, so that father thought she was the person who made mom pissed off.

Father finally knew the root matters, looking at Kang Yu, “What is your name?”

Kang Yu quickly standing up, he greeted father, uncle and then answered, “Kang Yu.”

“Age?”

“Born in Monkey year, 24 years old!”

“Do you like my daughter?”

“Yes!”

“Want to marry with her!”

“Yes.”

“Will treat her good?”

“Of course!”

Father looked so satisfied nodding his head, and then asking: "Where are you working now?"

"I am internship pilot in LTU one of Germany airlines company!"

Father eyes were shining brightly, "Pilot, not bad, have good future! Good future! Come, sit down, don't stand up, drinks the tea!"

Kang Yu said thank you while receiving Tea from father and sat down.

This was the huge difference between father and mother.

"What future career, he only an internship, not an official permanent pilot, not fulfill the qualification, there still looking for post." Mother stopped father with her high voice.

"How can you know that he won't be permanent employee, your daughter has founded pilot, not a servant!"

"Good your fart, he is not Shanghaiese, his education only graduated Senior High, you think that is good!" mother is glaring at father, looked alike he is going to dissect.

"This... what is the matter!" father thought is much open-minded.

"Cannot, cannot, since small Miao Miao is so obedient, she also good at study, if she wants to marry she must marry the best one!"

Since small mother loves me more compare to Yan Yan, I know that, but she really value me too high.

The best one?

She thought that her best must be the best for me.

Yan Yan secretly walked to Kang Yu's side, whispering, "Hey, why today I don't hear you speak from the start to the end, most of time you are so good in scheme people, but why I don't see you do it today, as long as you want, my mother isn't match for you."

Kang Yu so composed and answered by whispering, "Before your big sister not yet married to me, I would not scheme your mother, after we married, it won't be late."

Yan Yan got chocked, I was right beside Kang Yu too, I heard it, I got chocked too.

He still dared to say no scheming; this word had more meaning than scheming.

Mother saw no one came and help her, she is started to be hysterical, “I won’t approve it, I really won’t approve it!”

I thought to retort, but Kang Yu pulled my hand and stopped me, I turned my head: “What?”

“Your mother is fume in rage now, whatever you say is useless.” His expression so composed.

I had thought to remove his hand, I looked as if said this worries all because whom, how can he sat down alike Big Boss, it was fine if he didn’t help but he even stopped me.

“Sis, brother in law is right, in this state mom will not listen anything; you also don’t want to see her out of mind, right.”

However this had experienced before.

Father was opening his mouth, “Miao Miao, this must need your mom to understanding by herself.” He throwing a glance to Kang Yu, “You seem mature.”

Kang Yu stood up, “Thank you, uncle!”

“Good, good!” more father looked at Kang Yu more satisfied he was, patting at Kang Yu’s shoulders, talking about others thing for while and then he spoke with me: “Miao Miao, you take Kang Yu to sightseeing around here, so that your mom eyes are feeling more clean!”

“Oh!” I nodded my head.

I took Kang Yu to the doorway, immediately mom was stopping, but father stopped her, struggling to free, anger until her face white.

After Kang Yu wore his shoes, mom had already handled by father, I hurried taking him out.

When arrived at downstairs, I have already raged in fume toward him, “Not understand, you are so strange today!”

“Did you blame me because I not help you?”

“Nonsense, you see that I have talking until my saliva dried out, you even sitting down in sofa, as if you are big boss! My mother had underestimated you to that point, don’t you feel angry?” more I said more I felt unhappy, I even felt more grievances; I even doubted his sincerity to marry me.

“Miao Miao, she is your mother, although marriage is our business, but I don’t want after we marry, you are not getting blessing from your mother, so that whatever it is, I will endure it. Actually she wasn’t wrong, I don’t have good study background, I am also not permanent pilot, you married to me, indeed your losing!”

“You are not allowed to say that!” I stopped him, “It isn’t my lost, it is yours!”

I really self-conscious, I am not beautiful, my brain little bit stupid, my education is more alike luck, on other sides, he is so handsome, he has good brain, he has ability, based on his capability he must be easy to be official pilot.

No matter how to see it, the person who at loss stills him.

Kang Yu removed my hand that stopped covered his mouth he put my hand over his and kissed it, “Miao Miao, it is good if you know it!”

I glared at him, see, his true-self is appeared. He is schemed me again.

“You said that you are coming to make proposing and ask for marriage, don’t tell me, just now is counting as proposing!” I didn’t want to admit it.

Kang Yu holding my hand, he took me to the parking area, he opened the car trunk, he took out one big bouquet of roses, “Foremost I know very well your mom obstacle is the hardest, but I only come to introduce myself, at least I let her know who I am, so that we no need to have backstreet anymore in the future.”

I wanted to take the flower from him, he said, “Miao Miao, happy valentine day!”

When I received it, suddenly he is kneeling, “Dear, will you marry me?”

My heart filled so sweet, but I was mincing for while, “Proposing, what English you say?”

He furrowed, still in kneeling position, “Doesn’t like, let me change it!”

“My beloved, help me to sign the spouse column in my residence permit!” He looked and winked at me.

Suddenly I recalled the memory when I was in Junior high school, he said my writing was ugly, he asked me to practice it at home, or else when he asked me to sign in spouse column, it would be embarrassed him.

I caught his weakness, “I won’t sign it, who asked you criticized my handwriting before!”

That was the first time I saw Kang Yu deflated, his showed at loss expression, I almost wanted to laugh at him.

He frowned, “You dislike this one, let me change to another.”

He let me to take the roses, and then he took out onion and peppers from his pocket, I frustrated, what he intended to do, his left hand was holding onion, his right hand was holding peppers, still in kneeling position, he grabbing the onion and the peppers, sternly he said, “MM (Miao Miao), later you follow Ge Ge (Brother) me to eat delicious and drink wine (live well)! ”

My! I can’t hold anymore, I used the roses hit on his head, “Be serious, no one proposed in this way.”

His furrowed sternly, “Still not like it? Fine, I still have other!”

He thought for moment, he threw the onion and peppers, he used He Nan dialect, “The Northern household is raising one mother pig with group of piglets, if you are willing to live in our household, just sell the mother pig, concentrating one’s thought and effort to live with you.”

“Go you, you compare me with mother pig!” my stomach hurt from laughing, “cannot!”

And then, he still kneeling and crying pitiful looking at me, “Do you want to be buried in the graves of my family?”

I could feel my stomach going to explode of laughing, “Cannot.”

“Well...” he was pondering for moment, still kneeling but acted as if he is little scoundrel, “Humph, you woman, don’t refuse, you go with me this big boss.”

"Hahahaha!" I really could not endure it anymore, but I still said the same, "Cannot!"

He coughed, looking at me, he showed his finger, "Miao Miao, this is the last one, the last one that determine my success!" He said.

I talked to myself, well, let me see your last performance.

He kneeling in the ground, his body is straight, when he looked at me, I could see his eyes gleaming, my heart thumping hard, he smiled, his hand gripped my left hand, his expression looked so serious alike when we were landing in Fu Shun airport.

He said, "Miao Miao, I love You!"

I could feel my nose runny, I never heard he said that three words, moreover both of us have been dating more than 9 years, before I always thought that three words kind of poor in taste, so never thought how it feels to hear it from the person you love, it able to shaken one's heart.

My tears were flowing out of control, tears by tears just slipped down.

"Miao Miao, I love you!" he spoke it once again, it was louder compare to the before one, more touching.

I really useless because my tears flowing down.

"Miao Miao, I love you..."

After the third times he said, I have hugged him tightly, my face has been wet with tears, with heavy and hoarse crackly voice, I answered him: "I... I... me too, love you!"

He responded and hugged me back, his emotion was stirring up because I had said that three words.

Still hugging each other, we were reluctantly to be apart.

For some long time, Kang Yu asked me, "Miao Miao, do you agree or still disagree?"

"Dummy, you still not understand this!" my tears stopped, but still wanted hugging him for moment.

"It not, I just want to know clearly, my heart uncertain so not dare to stand up, can you tell me clearer so that I can stand up, my legs numb already!"

"....."

I forgot that Kang Yu still kneeling.

**

The marriage proposal which Kang Yu proposed I have agreed but my mom didn't agree, no ways, fait accompli, elope, ah forget it, I would not do such stupid things, so just solving the matter one by one, I hope my mom would enlighten for these matters.

After one year, that was 14 February 2005, Kang Yu bought one carat ring which was Cartier and proposed me for the second times. Others than the flashy and bling bling of the ring which almost blind me and eyesore for my eyes, the others naturally I agreed, my mother almost loosened up with that shining diamond ring, but at last she still not agreed.

Kang Yu and I were continuing our war.

After another one year passed, it was 14 February 2006, it was also the second day when Kang Yu finally turned became the permanent Pilot. He brought the documents that just settled and in the document there was my name, he has bought 208 meters square new house, he came to my house proposed for the third times. This time, my mom did not say anything she hurried nodding her head and even formally gave me to Kang Yu, she pointed at the doorway, "Registered!"

I felt so embarrassed, really wanted to dig big hole and jumped in.

Kang Yu pulled me and running.

Two hours later, I have married; we spent 48 Yuan for the photo fee, 18 Yuan for the registration fee, we got two marriage books which was the marriage pass.

I flipped the certificate (marriage book) to see one weird photo, there was two heads no body.

I felt almost faint, not pleasant for eyes.

14 February 2006, 16:30, I am married woman.

After one week, the wedding reception would held on November, it said that year was the double spring, a very rare good year after decades for marriage.

I born in Dog year, I like dog and I married in dog year.

In dog year, I got married in dog year.

Chapter 26 (26.1)



Chapter 26

Part 1 (One)

Wedding March

My wedding and Kang Yu had decided on 11 November, it was the single's day, this was the result after my mother and Kang Yu's mother had conversation.

So all those things that called as almanac, this generation like to use it.

But the 11 November the weather was not hot and also not cold, our marriage day also avoid the peak season of National day, this was also made Kang Yu and I felt we should go for it.

At the very beginning I thought marriage is about two persons, so things would not make us tired, but when I started all the wedding ceremonial, I just knew, the marriage, followed, tied a knotted, your entire life, these true meaning.

First at all you have to list all the wedding cost budget, discuss it with parents from the both of sides how to allocating the spending, drafting the list and banquet, scheduled the wedding venues, selecting the event organizer companies to help with the wedding process, buy candies, printing the invitation cards, and then starting to select the wedding photo studio while for me the new bride needed to join the beauty class program, also doing the loss-weight kind of things.

As additional, you still needed to renovate and decorate the new house, put the new furniture, home appliances and home decorations thing.

And then, collect all the information regarding to the honeymoon data for going to abroad, arrange the honeymoon location, the time for traveling.

Finally, start to select the clothing for the bride and groom for the wedding day, the bridesmaid and bestman listing name.

After the above mentioned, that's all only the rough explanations, the next is more in detail, too much things, really hopes to have hundred pairs of hands to do all of those, hundred brains, also hundred pairs of legs for you to use.

Kang Yu could not help for 100% because his working schedules, so that all the

things were pushing to me, in order to fulfill everything, I tried to find the time to make phone calls, or surfing internet and communicate with him.

In brief, I was busy, exhausting physically and mentally, I even thought to kill and burn anyone.

“Yu! We go for traveling marriage, how about it?” I decadent lying in the bed, talking with Kang Yu who was in Greece, the far away country.

“I am fine, as long as you like it!” Kang Yu smiled when talking in the phone.

I was so glad but suddenly mom rushing inside, “What travelling marriage, after the wedding ceremonial both of you still need to complete the feast, if not fulfill the feat are both of you want to wondering!”

For the elderly the traditions when married the daughter they must have big feast, dinner with the guests and to inform all the people.

As for my father said, if wanted to marry the daughter must go for big feast or else no need to marry.

My mother snatched my mobile phone, talking with Kang Yu, “Yu Er, don’t always spoiling Miao Miao, she is pampering until no limit, you must take care of yourself, don’t be too tired when comeback be careful, it something happens with the airplane this will cause big problem!”

The old saying indeed so right, mother in law taking good look for the son in law, more she looked at him more my mom feels satisfied with Kang Yu, now treating Kang Yu compare to me as her daughter is better off.

I listened to mother gibberish and advices for Kang Yu such as taking care, etc, and then hung up the phone called.

This is too cruel.

“You wake up, don’t lying down a like pig, doesn’t today the furniture send to the new house, see what time is it? Are you still not going?”

I have compromised to my mom threaten, nagging and then leaving my bed, “I go, I will go!”

“Sis, just now in internet I saw a gown, it suitable for me, buy it for me as the bridesmaid’s clothes, is it okay!”

This damn girl came to annoy me again!

“You go buy by yourself! Whether you want to be or not, others than you there still many people who wanted to be my bridesmaid!”

Since Kang Yu is working as pilot naturally our bestman is also someone from Airlines Company, as the saying goes, the bridesmaid and bestman, there is big possibility becoming the future bride and groom.

“I am your biological younger sister!”

“Even though you are my biological mother, I will also not give you face!” after I back from washing my face, I looked for dresses.

“What did you say!” my mom has been already at my back, after heard, my ears suddenly gripped tight by mom.

“No, no... I was saying Yan Yan.”

Heaven, I was intending married not went crazy.

Earlier knew better I eloped...

Huuuuuhuuu...

26.2



Chapter 26

Part 2 (Two)

Wedding March

July, my marriage and Kang Yu, there still four months to go, our new house is done with the renovation, the guests list and also the venue are done, it just left to confirm for last time the travel agency for the honeymoon traveling. The hotel and the menu list also done, all the matters regarding the tables and also the banquet areas just finding a time to settle it while having the photo shoots.

At the last is... my wedding gown what must I wear during the wedding day?

For the fatty, this is really super big matters.

"Miao Miao, have you choose, how about this model?" Xiao Fan asked me.

Every Saturday during July, I am going out with my fellow sisters to Su Zhou – Shanghai these two places to choose the wedding gown.

This time we are visiting the 56th store of wedding gown store.

In front of the eyes, there are many models and also colors of wedding gowns but no matter which model I tried, all just not suitable, the trends for the wedding gown currently is the models without sleeves and showing the cleavage, I liked it but it really not suitable for me.

"You can't wear the one without sleeves, how about this model, but it is little bit old fashioned!" Xiao Shuang also chose one for me to take a look.

"How about this one, it is the high waist babydoll model!" Da Shuang was at the other side of me.

All of them looked more excited compare to me, I just felt headache.

"Tired! Drink the tea!" now every times I see the white wedding gown I would have this word.

"Miao Miao, no rush, there still four months to go, still have time!" Xu Ying is comforting me.

I nodded my head, there are group of people came to following me out from the wedding gown store, I wanted to have rest in tea shop.

When I was in tea shop, suddenly Sun Ling spotted one store that specializing in Chinese costume, she was calling me to look at it so that I just came to have look, actually on the first I really felt not interested but when I saw at the glasses window that displayed Chinese Gown shirt, my eyes shining brightly.

So beautiful!

“Woah! Is it similar to Ju Zi Hong Le / Ripening Orange that drama costumes!” Cong Li Jun said.

“Similar, but this one is more traditional, it even has very fine embroidery!”

A group of women are discussing about the costume from the outside the glass windows.

Inside the store there is aunty that saw us, the group of women seems to be interested with the costume so she quickly came to greet us.

I really couldn't restrain myself to get inside the store.

We are following at her back and asking her many questions, once the aunty knew that I am the new bride immediately greet me, “Wearing wedding gown isn't must now days, the formal gown also will do too as long as when wearing it looks beautiful. My store has designer with forty years experiences in making Chinese costumes, all the embroidery is handmade, the pattern is stitch one by one, absolutely the machine production can't be compare with our handmade, Miss, if you like it you can give a try!”

I moved.

Why must wearing wedding gown, as the Chinese we must wear Feng Guan Xia Pei* when married.

凤Feng 冠Guan 霞Xia 帷Pei :something alike hat/tiara that wear by the Chinese bride in the ancient time.

“Miao Miao, you wear this one look beautiful!”

They are starting to encourage me.

“This one, since you are afraid to show skin, this is completely wrapped, won't

show your white skin and your rounded pearl figure, this must be suitable!"

Reasonable!

"This is the Qing dynasty costume!"

Ling Li you are really understands my mind ah!

The aunty answered: "Yes, this is the clothing that used during the Qing dynasty, we are also sells the same hairpin which also Qing Dynasty and also others accessories, it is definitely looked prestigious."

I was so excited until my hands shaking.

"How much it cost?" both of my eyes were gleaming brightly when asking.

"This must see what pattern you choose, the material, the cutting; if it is not too complicated or having special requirement the estimate cost will be about 21800, it will take 90 days for making it! We are also having home visit service!"

My eyes which is gleaming brightly suddenly dims without any light.

Too TMD expensive, this is robbery ah!

Now my hand was trembling and also my legs, I trembled and walking backward to the door, but my eyes just could not stop to see the costumes hanging on the displayed glasses, we are also taking the business card from the shop.

I go home!

**

I go home, my house with Kang Yu.

Whatever since the renovation for the new house is done, the furniture is completed, my mom thought the real marriage is started so rather than I still staying at home doing nothing better packaging all my belonging and kicked me out.

So that finally I started to live together with Kang Yu.

When night comes, I prepared the dinner, I set the plate and chopsticks, don't underestimate me, although I am not skillful, but once I have decided to focus on doing something, I really learn it well, include joining the cooking class and learn

how to cook isn't giving me difficulties.

Seven sharp, Kang Yu at home, summer in Shanghai, the weather still hot even at night, he is wearing suit and his Pilot uniform, once he entered the room he sighed "Really comfortable!"

Of course it comfortable, the indoor temperature is about 26 degree very appropriate for body temperature of course it nice and cool.

"You back!" I really looked alike virtuous wife that takes his pilot uniform and also his working bag, put all the stuffs on the corner.

Kang Yu kisses my cheek, "En, I will wash my hands first!"

He takes off his suit and hanging it on the hanger, he walking to the kitchen and then I sit down with him and we are having dinner together.

"Miao Miao, your sweet sour pork are really good more you cooked it more better it is." He is looked hungry.

"You eat slower no one will fight with you!"

To be honest how it does not taste good since I know he likes to eat, I have practice for many times.

I am not useless person!

"Miao Miao, hurry eat, later there will be people coming here!" Kang Yu added stir fry vegetable while talking to me.

"Will be people coming? Who?" I don't know.

My mind still flowing with that gown but it is too expensive, he and I have spent lot of money for our marriage, most of the money is spent his, I really feel embarrassing if I still spent and burdensome him.

Kang Yu eats two bowl of rice, he really has great appetite, moreover when he eats his favorite dishes, at least he must eat two bowls of rice.

"Later you will find out!" Kang Yu is continuing eating and added the sweet sour pork.

"Well, should I cook another few dishes?" now is dinner time, since there will be guest coming here, naturally must invite them to eat.

"No need, they are not coming for eating!" his second bowl has already clean, not even singles rice left.

After having dinner, I hurry to clean up the dining table, wanting to wash the plates, Kang Yu said, "Let me wash it, you go to make tea!"

"Oh!" I answered him, since there would be guest coming, not having dinner at least must give them drink.

After I done with making tea, put it in table, I took melon seed from the snack shelf, served it in plate and Kang Yu phone is ringing.

"Miao Miao, are you really married to me, are you sure? Not regret?"

"I am sure, no regret! I will marry to you, who afraid who."

"Not lie?"

"Absolutely no, who lies, then that person is bastard turtle!"

I feel my head has three black lines, every times I hear this ringtone feel not good but he does not want to listen to me, the development of technology actually not really good, why must he set this as his mobile phone ringtone.

Humph!

26. 3

Chapter 26

Part 3 (Three)

Wedding March

Looking at the mobile phone displayed screen I stunned for while how can I feel so familiar with the number?

I answered the phone: "Hello!"

"Is Mr. Kang there?" it is an aunty voice.

"Yes, he is here, washing dishes, wait for while!" I brought the mobile phone to the kitchen, Kang Yu still washing so he could not hold the mobile phone so I helped him to put in his ear, while my brain was trying hard to remember where I saw this number before.

Kang Yu said on the phone: "Jin Si Hua Yuan, when arrived at Jin Hui road, there will be private Dental clinic, turn left and go straight, that's it, en, that's right, you enter to big door of small district, turn left and then the second building, right, go to third floor, ok, I wait for you! Just this way! En, I hang up the phone!"

I am frustrated, "Who?"

He does not say to me, washing the dishes, his face getting nearer to my face, and again he kissed my face.

I take the mobile phone to the living room, I take a glance at the phone number, more I see more I feel familiar with the number, when I am trying to remember, suddenly the door bell is ringing.

I rushing to the in front door, I press the button from the visual screen, it showing the face of the person who I met this afternoon.

Didn't she, the aunty of the Chinese Costume store? There is no way since I like that dresses very much, I also do not know what the aunty name, so I just call her in that way.

Now I remember that phone number is posted at the outside of the glass

window for booking!

I am surprised!

The aunty is not wait for long, straightly called, “Mr. Kang, we are from Yun Chinese Costume shop, we are arrived and standing in front of your door, please open the door!”

Yun is the Chinese costume store name.

I am dumbfounded.

Kang Yu just done with washing the dishes, seeing me dumbfounded does not making move, he directly pushed a button to open the main door, “Please get upstairs!”

I still standing there, still not understanding.

Kang Yu stroking my head, and open the door.

The aunty is bringing an old designer aunty along with her, and also there is an assistant who looked alike little girl, going upstairs.

When the aunty seeing me, passionately she greets me, “Miss, you have thought about it, I have said to you, listened to what Aunty said isn’t wrong, this as wedding gown is really beautiful!”

The problem is she hasn’t thought about it.

Kang Yu let them to get in, the Aunty quite passionate, toward the house, she quite surprised, “The space is quite big, it is duplex, even the floor is beech, also the mahogany furniture, really beautiful decoration!”

The old designer is more professional, “Can I take the measurement?”

“Can!” Kang Yu helps to support me who stills dumbfounded and push me forward.

I regained myself and I turned to see Kang Yu, “How can you know?”

Kang Yu answered me, “What that I don’t know from you?”

I looked at his expression, I just know it, he must know everything what I was doing with my group of fellow sisters, he is informed even I don’t mention anything.

Suddenly, one name is pop out from my mind.

“Must be Sun Ling, right? I know must be Sun Ling!” No wonder, when I left, she was keeping on asking me, whether I really like it or not, really want it.

Kang Yu does not answer, he just said, “As long as you like it!”

Needless to make guess, must be Sun Ling, she really his Kang Yu’s slave.

I stunned and feel so excited while my eyes is shining brightly, “But it is so expensive, really so expensive!”

“Expensive, whatever I just marry for one time, just thought it as one time investment, I will get life returns, very good deal!” he extends his hand and wiping away my tears.

After I listened to him, I am sobbing, I hug him tightly, “Kang Yu!”

“See, I haven’t really make the investment, but I have got the return already!” he hugged me and coaxing me.

The old designer, the aunty, even the assistant, three pairs of eyes are gleaming brightly toward Kang Yu and I, perhaps they turned be muddle head by Kang Yu and I.

“Mr. Kang, Mrs. Kang, can we do the measurement?” the old designer has took out the measurement roll for long time.

“Wait for moment, my wife mood still little bit waver!” he brings me to bathroom, let me to wash my face, not letting any single tears in my face.

When I feel my mood stabile, the old designer is starting to do the measurement, the collar size, the bust size, the waist size, both of my arms and everything that needed to measure, also, in order to make Chinese costume, there are also the measurement for the high waist measurement, the bust height, chest horizontal long the in front and the back, the waist and everything must be in detail, I feel alike gyroscope playing by the old designer.

Kang Yu is sitting on sofa reading his flight schedule while sometimes take a glance at me.

Waiting until all the measurement get to measure, the old designer aunty and the assistant starting to let me choosing the cloth fabric.

Since we are getting married of course must choose red color, but the red color has many, I take a look at the cloth fabric, my eyes are almost blurry, what kind of Long Feng Ji Xiang (The auspicious dragon and phoenix), the luxurious peony, the ten thousand loves, Xi Que Deng Zhi (The magpie), Ji Xiang Ba Bao (Eight treasure auspicious), I really have headache.

At last I choose the luxurious peony and the Long Feng Ji Xiang, compare one to another, it makes me difficult which one I want to choose.

“Yu, you say choose which ones?” he is the person who pays for it of course I need to ask his opinion.

Kang Yu puts down his flight schedule list, comes closer, “Which one you like?”

“The luxurious peony!” I feel the color is especially beautiful.

“Well, just take the peony ones!”

I feel asking him just such useless.

The aunty said, “If want to choose the peony, must be additional cost about 2000 dollars, because it uses different embroidery handmade, of course the result of the embroidery is detailed and collectable.”

Stills need the additional money!

“Well... just take the Long Feng Ji Xiang!” I wipe the sweat in my head.

“Designer Aunty, help me to do the peony ones!” Kang Yu is ready to make the order after checking at the pattern and said to the designer aunty.

“Don’t ah! It has be so expensive, no need to have any additional cost, not worth the money!”

“Miao Miao, the person who make investment is me. It is okay it I think it worth!”

“But, but...” after I counted, one set clothes cost 23,800 dollars, really so expensive.

“Don’t but anymore, designer aunty, just take this one!” Kang Yu said to the designer.

The aunty also follows, “Mr. Kang, you are really loves your wife, I have be in

this business for such long times, this is the first time I meet someone like you!"

Kang Yu smiles and ignores her, asked, "What is other still need to choose?"

The old aunty answered, "Choosing the cutting style, you want to choose the precious blue or the golden yellow colors!"

"Miao Miao, do you like which ones?" Kang Yu lowers his head asking me.

After I thought for while, "The precious blue! It matches with the red color, very beautiful!"

Then the aunty said, "If choose the precious blue, then must add..."

I hurried cut her word, "Golden... the golden yellow! Just choose the golden yellow."

Kang Yu just speaks, stopped me, "Precious blue!"

"Yu!" if earlier I know my mouth won't be this fast, I should ask clearly then speak.

"Miao Miao, since decided to make, why don't we make to the best one! Just when the times come you are not happily wearing it!"

The aunty added, "That's it, that's it, marry, it is two people biggest day, it must be perfect, well, since everything decided, the total sum up..." the aunty is so fast count it using her calculator, "25,800 Dollars, seeing how nice dealing with Mr. Kang, I give a discount, the net total will be 25,000 dollars!"

"Well, pay using cash or swipe credit card!"

"The best is using cash, using credit card must pay the administration fee, so wasting!" the aunty is cleverly answered.

Kang Yu nodding his head gets inside the master room to take out money.

I am open widely my eyes, seeing the aunty counting the money, my heartache, really ache!

Before the aunty left she even has time to wink her eyes to me, "Miss, you are so lucky, be able find good man, I have seen many beautiful girls husband, none of them can be able compare with your man, you say, how you catch him?"

This words meaning are too obvious, someone like me could find someone like

Kang Yu, simple to say the forehead high so can touch the ceiling.

All just by luck!

26.4



Chapter 26

Part 4 (Four)

Wedding March

It is not that I am unhappy, but this is the reality.

I escort them out, I come to flatter Kang Yu, massaging his feet.

“Yu, thank you!” I really feel so happy.

“What to thankful?” Kang Yu is continuing read his flight schedule.

“Thank you that you love me so much!” he really loves me as if worship heaven.

He lifts up his head, he acted as if a like little rascal, “It is good if you know, humph, humph, remember to served me as big boss!”

“Yes, big boss, your maid will serve you best!” I massage his hands and move to his shoulders.

“When the weather is hot, remember to fan me!”

“Yes!”

“When the weather is cold, remember to warm the house!”

“Yes!”

“When eating, remember to feed me!”

“Yes!”

“When taking bath, remember to wash my back.”

“Yes!”

“Still...” suddenly he grabbed my hand.

I thought he must not serious.

His eyes are sincerely looking at me, “Miao Miao, this is the most important; you are not allow to pass away before me!”

I can feel my eyes hot, "Yu..."

I really get touched, he continues, "If you are pass away before me, I will immediately take the second wife, but if I die before you, you are not allow to marry another man!"

"....."

This word is too unnecessary!

**

11 November 2006, it is my wedding day, early in the morning; I have eaten many foods, in order to save energy for the one day, and then I do my hair, makeup, dressed, actually the dresses that I wear is from Yun shop, I really impressed with their handmade work, after I wear it, I feel totally be different person, whoever sees it will praise beautiful, simply to say it really similar to the movies.

I am satisfied.

My bridesmaid is Yan Yan, Da Shuang, Xiao Shuang and Ling Li, in order to match with my style, all of them are wearing the maid dresses which I have prepared before, regarding Xu Ying, Liu Li Jun, Xiao Fan, Cong Li Juan, Sun Ling, Liao Jia Ying, those my high school mistress and daughter are taking role as guard door.

As said, before Kang Yu comes, one by one of them are having steel-heart, they have thought many ways to torture the bridegroom, the result, when Kang Yu comes, one by one of them are such useless, without further words, they let him in easily.

I asked them why?

All of them are totally scare, said "Won't win over him!"

Really my karma!

Perhaps my bride access is the easiest because letting the bridegroom easy to come in.

Forget it, anyway I still have to marry him, easy just let it be.

The wedding reception is planning to be held in Cheng Jia Qiao, Jin Qian Bao Qi Jian ballroom, at the beginning is going to take traditional style, but my relatives are too many, my father business acquaintances, friends, as additional my mother relatives, her colleagues, my friends, my classmates and my colleagues, add Kang Yu and his mother's friend which comes from Dong Bei, Kang Yu's colleagues, classmates simply to say too many, total about 606 people, so that the traditional wedding reception really wouldn't do, at last we are choosing the self serve style.

Based on what Kang Yu said, as long getting the red pocket, who cares they are standing tired or not, comfortable or not!

This point I agreed with him!

My wedding ceremony process with Kang Yu aren't in fancy way, I do only wearing simple Chinese traditional dresses in one piece (cheomsam style, similar to the picture) during the ceremony, because changing dresses are too troublesome so that better to wear one full attire dresses.

On the wedding day, I wear Chinese traditional one piece dresses, Kang Yu is wearing Zhong Shan, this is well-match, as additional my full makeup face, no matter what to say still we are perfect match, suitable for each other.

For once again I feel content.

During the wedding ceremony it is so crowded, and also success, this is also as what I have thought before, except the guests toast drinking session, I really couldn't think about it, from the relatives side, I don't have to worry, my father my mother, my mother in law, all of them know the limit, but my friends and Kang Yu's friends, classmates, colleagues, all of them are different. These years disturbance for the bride and bridegroom first night most of time did by friends, classmates, and also colleagues, once they are going crazy really could not stop them.

I asked Kang Yu, "Can you drink?"

Kang Yu answered, "Cannot!"

Too sinister, I also cannot drink!

I trembling, I tugged his sleeves, obviously I panic.

But Kang Yu not even looked panic, comforting me by patting my hands, suddenly his face looked secretive, smiles deviously toward me, "You think they dare to make me drunk?"

Me—at the beginning not really understand what did he mean, but I quite surprised with his expression.

I am stroking my chest really scared!

Kang Yu is holding my hand, he starting to take me heading to his colleagues for toasting, something strange is happened.

All of them are looking alike the most obedient babies, during the toasting session all of them are well-manner and act strangely, one by one of them are using small cups, there are even people who toasting only half cup, even there are people who help Kang Yu to drink.

"Let me, let me, how can we let our Wang Ye to drink!"

"That's right! Hey, pour little bit!"

"Still better drink cola, cola tastes good!"

"Crazy, cola is not good for men vitality, you are dumbass! Drink milk, drink yogurt good, for nourishment, nourishment!"

Vitality! I have cold sweat!

There stills the strangest, "Waiter, bring mineral water!"

So on and so on.....

Before married it is kind of one thing, after married it surprising still same thing, really weird and strange.

When my father brought Kang Yu to meet my relatives who came late, I could not endure my curiosity and asked them, "What happened to all of you?"

All of them are stroking their head, said, "Afraid... afraid of revenge!"

My sweat is flowing as heavy as rain.

The best and perfect word to describe Kang Yu is "Schemer" and also he is able to give huge influence.

Hence, my wedding ceremony with Kang Yu is quite success.

The next is, welcoming ahead me is...

My face becoming red...

First wedding night!

Chapter 27 (27.1)

Chapter 27

Part 1 (One)

The expectation is not high

Kang Yu is really a type of conservative man, although he and I have already possessed married book, I even being kicked out by my mother to live together with him, because of his conservatives, he not even touched me, he persistent to wait until the wedding ceremony ended.

I have ever suspected, either he cannot or I don't have any charm.

There was one time I really could not endure to tease him. Whether on purpose or not I tried to seduce him, at the beginning he still coaxing me, later he could not endure it anymore and shouted at me: "Get lost! Leave me further! When November 11 arrived you will see!"

After said, he chased me out from the master room, locking himself inside the room, no matter how I knocking the door, there was no responded from him.

Trying to recall, I just could turn my back and left.

He is too seriously!

But today...

I am sitting on bed in hotel room, my face is red and takes a peek to Kang Yu who is standing at one corner, talking in phone with my mother in law. That word, "You wait and see" shameless flowing in my mind.

I almost cannot bear it anymore so I try to find something to do in order to turn my focus.

Counting money!

I take the red pockets and open it and take out all the money from red pocket, starting to count the money.

Currently there is trend, many of people during the first wedding night is spent by counting money, there are few like me and Kang Yu who wait until the wedding night to do it, most of them are counting money during the first

wedding night.

I remembered, during the days when I and Kang Yu had cold war with my mother, there was my female friend who just married, she brought me out to have tea, I kind gossiper asking her, how she spent her wedding night? The most important I want to learn from other experience.

She answered: "My husband drunk and sleeping in bed, snoring. I sat down in toilet bowl counting money!"

I have cold sweat...

I counting money while taking peek on Kang Yu, tonight will he let me counting money or not.

Ugh...

"En, Mother, I know, you take your rest an early, tomorrow? I afraid tomorrow cannot!" Kang Yu is on the phone, suddenly he turned to look at me, his eyesight is so gentle and warm, but also odd, and then he looked so certain talking in the phone with my mother in law: "Miao Miao, tomorrow might not be able get down from bed!"

My face is stiffening burning hot, I almost tear one-hundred-dollar money.

He... what he... what he said?

"She is fine, I mean today she is too tired, really tired...until not be able get down from bed, okay, tomorrow Miao Miao and I won't come to accompany you, my father and mother in law will come to pick you up, they said wanted to take you touring to Cheng Huang Miao (City God Temple of Shanghai), you and aunty Zhang playing happily, en, the following day I will go with Miao Miao to visit you, honeymoon, next week, you rest assured, I won't make her too tired, okay, that's it, I hung up the call!"

After hung up the called, my heart is beating super-fast, I feel cannot breathe.

Counting money, I keep on counting the money!

Where have I counted? Ah forget it, just counting.

"Miao Miao..." Kang Yu called me so dearly.

I am so surprised, he suddenly jumps to the bed, “En...I... I feel... feel little bit boring, watch...Television!” I even am falling down from the bed, searching for the remote control, and then turn on the television.

I don't really know which beast was staying at here before, when I turned on the kids channel, it is broadcasting Mavis Fan's* song, (Health Song).

*范Fan 晓Xiao 萱Xuan : Mavis Fan is Taiwanese Pop singer, well-known as Bo Bo or Little Witch (credit to Wikipedia)

Grandpa said morning easy get up from bed, making love, making love!

These lyrics...

Xiao Xuan Xuan (Little Xuan) followed her grandpa together to learn making love! Making love! Making love!

Sex! Sex! Sex!

Sex! Sex! Sex!

Inside my heart I am screaming, how could they modified kids' song into this kind of song.

Beast, really a beast!

Immediately I turned off the television, shut down the noise.

“Miao Miao...” Kang Yu voice is sounded so sexy, this time hard to ignore.

“I...I...” I really scared!!!

27.2



This chapter is fully fill with steamy scenes.

Chapter 27

Part 2 (Two)

The expectation is not high

Kang Yu back hug me, “Don’t you think that until today, I will still let you off!”

He is spreading warm breath in my ears, I could feel my body is burning hot.

I starting to tremble, at the moment my legs are weakening.

He holding me, he even gives me princess hug, I kind of surprised and closed my eyes, at the time he puts me down to the bed, I really do not dare to open my eyes.

I could feel his body is pressing down mine, I stunned for moment and my body turned be rigid.

“Miao Miao, open your eyes!” he is caressing my face.

I still trembling when open my eyes, his face is so close with mine, I don’t know whether it because the lighting or not but I could see his face as if shining goldenly, very bright, his eyes are showing gentleness when looking at me.

“Have you prepared?” he asked.

My head feels burning hot, I blurted out, “I wear nothing except the bathrobe!”

When I had arrived inside the hotel room, I removed my makeup, that thick makeup, earlier I had sickened with it.

The cheerful and happy laughing voice, he hugs me, his head is heading to my color bone, murmured, “Miao Miao, you are so cute!”

I feel so embarrassed, perhaps my toes already turned red.

“But...” he lifts his head up, his eyesight gleaming strangely, “Although you are said so, I still needs to check it by myself, so that I know whether you are really

wear it or not!"

I do also want to know whether he wear nothing inside his bathrobe!

I firmly tugging his bathrobe, very tense, use too much strength, his bathrobe already pulls down just in moment, that baggy bathrobe slipped and showed his shoulders and also exposing his broad sturdy chest.

My head is almost in smoke.

He laughs and teasing, "Miao Miao, don't such rush, let's we do it slowly!"

"I don't... in rush..." I am so embarrassed, opened my mouth, but he pulled me and kissing my lips, he is on purpose sucking my lips and also teasing me.

I feeling muddle headed with his kissing, and then I could feel he is starting to touch me, I don't know since when the bathrobe has half fallen down, I could feel his fingers are moving on my skin surface, his hot palm is covering me, it feels so comfortable.

He kisses from my lips to my ears, softly he bites.

An instantly I could feel my body feel numb and my head is spinning, at the same time it gives me thrilling sense.

"Yu..." I called his name, he extended his hand to hold me.

My response toward him absolutely unrestrained, his hands nimble my fullest chest, softly he kneading, his kissing is moved from my ears to my chest.

I am clearly could feel he is loving my chest, he is very careful kneading and gently kissing it.

Just expected, he is not telling lie, he really loves big chest woman.

I raised my head, just in time I looked at him, he is alike a baby that sucking all sweetness of my chest, waiting until he tastes it enough, he changes to other side.

My chest that has sucked by him, he left his saliva there, it is alike crystal shine, because I not really often to wear topless clothes, my chest is exceptionally very white, soft and tender, kneading by his hands my chest can be at any form.

This is really...erotic.

I can feel my head become muddle, my body turning become more sensitive.

My body's hair seems to strand up, while my below part does not feel alike above silky sheets but hard papers, could not help myself to touch, finally I remembered, I had been counting money before.

We... after all are doing thing above the money, too...indignation.

"Money...money..." I sighed, this money still will be used to pay the hotel bills, if it stained or damage...what a bad.

Kang Yu seems not happy as if being disturbed by me, he punished me by biting my fullest chest, an instant I could feel myself trembling sensitive, he raised my waist up, makes me to have some distant with the bed sheet, and then with one of his big hand he swaying away the bed sheet and also the money, falling down to the floor.

For once more he pressing on me, he is crazily playing with my chest and even used more strength.

"Yu..." I wanted to tell him to stop tormenting it, but realizing the voice that I let out, it is sound different, feeling alike sweat glutinous thick honey.

He seems not to be heard, after all he is forgetting about me, thinking as if my chest is one of the best meals he has.

Suddenly, he lifts up his head from my chest, his deep black eyes shining, his face is burn red as if having fever.

"Miao Miao, Miao Miao..." his voices, at sudden contains suffering feeling, stirring up bites my ear, one of his hands still in my chest, gently kneading it.

My ears, I could hear his breathe is breathing heavier.

The feeling limp and numb, again and again pounding against me, my reflex is stretching my legs and wrapped around to his waist.

He even looked at me with happy expression: "Miao Miao?"

My whole body as if longing on something, nonstop calling his name, "Yu... Yu..." my voice is not that sweet and unctuous, rather kind of creaking moaning sound.

Even I myself don't know why I could let out this kind of voice.

And then, I could feel his hand isn't at my chest anymore but sliding down, goes deeper...

I shivering a bit, not really comfortable, but at same time I want it to be continuing, my legs moving, once again I have wrapped him.

He looks as if understand what I wanted, his deep eyes are shining brightly, clear alike crystal, suddenly his low deep voice laughing, "Miao Miao, don't rush, go slowly."

What is slowly, I don't feel in rush, but his fingers moving in my lower abdomen, there is warmth feeling that slowly spreading.

"En..." while me looked alike little kitty, sighed.

After Kang Yu heard it, he is trembling.

I quite surprised why he is trembling, for once again he grabbing my fullest chest, and then slowly by slowly, he knees between my legs.

With this kind of position, I feel more restless, my body is tense up, and then his kissing is gradually sliding down, and go down...

Slide down...finally I only can see his black hair, unconsciously I moving to and fro my hands, grabbing his black hair.

I moaning alike kitten called out as if in urgent, my body arched...

He seems alike waiting for opportunity, he moves his body to in front.

Something getting into my body, I feel something big and also pained me, I feel my body stiffen.

"Yu...hurt...hurt...!" I cried.

He is not stopping, "Endure it, Miao Miao, endure it, later it will be better!" his voice is sounded so anxious, he carefully kissed on place my tears flowing down.

I feel not comfortable, but he looked worse than me.

Finally, I get used with the pain feeling, and start over moaning alike little kitten, restless moving my legs.

He lets out soft humming voices, slowly start to move.

At the beginning it is slowly, but not long after that he suddenly becoming excited.

I quite surprised, I could hear his heavy breathing, his movement is wilder, trying to catch on his pace, but I realized he is too fast.

I wanted to tell him slow down, but at last I let out en en ah ah moaning sounds...

27.3

Chapter 27

Part 3 (Three)

I feel myself as if a little boat floating in the wavering ocean and will be drown, but he does not calm down even a slightest, he even more ferocious.

I do only can grab his back, hinting him to go slower, gentle little bit.

He does not react even a bit, moreover he shows enjoying expression.

My body is starting to ache because of his quick pace, swelling, it feels pain until I can't resist myself not to bite his shoulder to vent out my feeling.

He mm a sound, but he even becomes more excited, so ferocious and barbaric.

Unconsciously I'm starting to sob, I feel as if I am being torn up, I start to cry and begging him, kicking him, and even thinking to push him away.

But he is catching my hands, pressed my hands down to the bed-head, and goes wildly.

I feel I gonna die, I want to cry but there is no sound I could let out, I do only nonstop sobbing with soft voices.

Finally he could feel, he is apologizing in my ear, "Miao Miao, Sorry... I am sorry...I have... lost control! Eleven years... I have waited for eleven years, I have wanted you for eleven years..."

I have already utterly defeated, I let him torampage and tormenting me.

After passed for unknown long time, when I thought I might go die, he growled with his hoarse voice, grimacing, and his body spasm and shivering a little, felt to top of my body as if death person.

Finally stopped, I came back to live.

I pushing him, he didn't move even an inch.

I pushed him again, but suddenly he even goes crazier and wilder thrusting me, my head simply hit on the bed-head, the pain makes me gritting my teeth.

I saw him again, his face is showing comfortable expression, he is lying on my chest, there is no slightest movement from him.

Is he death, or he sleeps?

And then what?

And then what to do?

No one taught her before arghhhhhh!

Waiting until Kang Yu awake, the sun has already rose, I was pressing down by him for the entire night, naturally I didn't have good sleep, but he looked in good-mood, as if he had eaten the most nutrient food looks very energetic.

When he realized he had pressed me down from the entire night, seeing my bleak and pale face, his expression immediately changed.

“Miao Miao, are you still okay!”

I was lying at the bed as if death-corpses.

“Miao Miao, talk, where do you feel not uncomfortable!”

Belated effort! All men are worst!

“Miao Miao...” he coaxing me, he even using his hand to beg for my mercy.

I back him, ignore him.

“Miao Miao, don't act like this...” his eyes filled with guilty, “I...I have wanted you too much...”

Damn you wanted too much, it was you who trying to endure it, it was you who wanted to wait until the marriage ceremony, it wasn't me who didn't allow you, well, now you done it, but you done it too rough.

He sees me ignore him, he is starting to kiss me gently, my face, my neck, my back, all is kissed by him until numb, after I experienced last night, I am not little girl anymore, being teased by him, my body is feeling hot.

But, I endure it.

“Miao Miao...” he is panicking.

After half day, he kneeling at the bed side, with guilty expression he said, “You can't expect too much from virgin man!”

“.....”

I grab pillow, I throw it to him.

He catches the pillow, but looked so happily, raised his body up when seeing me glaring at him, "Miao Miao, finally you have reaction!"

I back him, once again ignore him.

He is climbing to the bed with his hands and feet, he promised me, "Don't be angry? En? How about, we have one more time, I promised after taking this lesson I won't do same mistake anymore, I will give you a satisfaction!"

"....."

I can't help, I paw his face.

Go die you!

Thus, after my first wedding night is rolling tears of ecstasy, this scenery...

My first...finally... finally no more!

Chapter 28 (28.1)

Chapter 28

Newlywed*

“Yu Er, what happened with your face?”

Three days after wedding day, Kang Yu and I go to meet Po Po (Mother in law), face to face, Po Po has seen Kang Yu left face red and swollen, distressed to death.

I am absolutely sure, Po Po never hit Kang Yu, and subconsciously I shrink behind Kang Yu, because I am the person who responsible of it.

“Mom, nothing, it was because yesterday I got bite by mosquito, dazed and sleepy, I hit by myself!”

“Mosquito?” Po Po is surprised, “This winter time, how come there was mosquito!”

I am so nervous behind of Kang Yu, tugging his sleeves.

Kang Yu calmly said: “Mom, you don’t know; now the mosquito is having evolution, especially the Shanghai’s mosquitoes, they are available in every season, and they are like to go out in the winter the most!”

Mosquito? Still the Shanghai mosquito!

My sweat is as heavy as rain.

“Is it hurt or not, hitting mosquito why you hit this hard, tcktcktck, see it swollen like this?” Po Po is nagging while stroking and blowing Kang Yu’s face.

“It is okay, my skin is thick, tomorrow will be healed!” Kang Yu is coaxing Po Po.

And then, he is pulling me from his behind to in front, “Miao Miao, call!”

My face is beet red, obediently I called, “Mom!”

An instantaneously Po Po has forgotten about Kang Yu swollen face,

immediately she takes my hand when I am greeted her.

Kang Yu told me, in Dong Bei (Northeast), the daughter in law must give tea as respect to mother in law, although this is old-fashioned, but in order to seek auspicious, when waiting Kang Yu to pick Po Po to home, I hurried go to kitchen to make a tea.

“Mom, drink tea!” I bow in respect, pouring tea to the cup.

Po Po is so happy, in front of Kang Yu, exaggerating him that has good eyes, able to pursuit girl.

I feel sorry for that.

“Mom, was you having fun yesterday?” Kang Yu put down the luggage, sitting beside Po Po.

Didn’t let her to stay at home because the wedding night we were staying at hotel, house is big, my father and mother are busy with their work, so could not accompany her, after thinking carefully, we let her to stay at hotel with her group of friend from Dong Bei, first because convenience, second lively and also there would be person to take care of her.

Today we are especially picked her goes home, wanted to accompany her.

“Happy, Qin Jia Gong* and Qin Jia Mu*, brought me and Aunty Zhang, them to many places, you say how could this Shanghai so different with the olden Shanghai, it changes alike overseas, that huge building which named 88 floors, I feel my neck ache when see it, and then something named what tower, you say how thing done, one steel ball has three balls!”

I ck wanted to laugh, Po Po must be meant Jin Mao Tower* and Oriental Pearl Tower*.

No wonder, she has spent half of her life in Fu Shun, listened to Kang Yu, at the early year she has to bear bitter hardship to raise him, first time she came to Shanghai, it was twenty years ago matter, when Kang Yu growing up to be useful man, she didn’t go anywhere, most of her time is spending with the Dong Bei Aunties and Uncles together singing and dancing, listening to song and dance of the northeast, days just passing by this way.

“Only this air... not change!” Po Po showing bitter expression, stroking her knees, “Unbearable, you say how this southern city can be so cold during winter, I see the warm temperature won’t be able beat Fu Shun, just this deep down cold, the cold makes my legs feel numb, tired and pain.”

Kang Yu hurried kneeling down, gently massage Po Po knees, “Is it because of the season so that pain?”

“Still okay, just warm it, it is okay!” Po Po is patting Kang Yu’s hand, “Don’t worry, I have good body and so do my bone!”

I am preoccupied talking with Po Po, there is no heater quickly I look for the remote and turn it on, Shanghai and Dong Bei are different, if there is no heater, not alike Dong Bei during winter, outside the house is cold but inside the house it is warm, Shanghai either outside or inside are same, no heater, the cold is frozen, as additional if there is raining, it can be extremely freeze to the bone.

“Miao Miao, take a basin of warm water, let my mom soak her feet!” Kang Yu called.

“Oh!” I replied him, hurried go to bathroom.

I take the warm water, put it down in front of Po Po, Kang Yu puts up his sleeves, take off Po Po shoes, let her to soak her feet, I could not stand by only seeing so I hurried to kneel down and squeezing Po Po’s feet.

Po Po panics, “Daughter in Law, stand up, just let Yu Er do it, Yu Er, hurry, ask your wife to stand up!”

“Mom, didn’t you say that I am good at choosing woman, just let your good daughter in law taking good care of you!” after said, he looked me with touching eyes.

Again, I feel shy.

After soaking the feet, the heater is turn on and the house is warm, Po Po feels more comfortable, I looked at the time, it is going to be lunch time, I still thinking whether to eat at home or dine out.

I pulled Kang Yu to kitchen, “Should I go to buy vegetable and then cook!”

“No need, going out to eat! You don’t be busy, see you, you have dark circle!”

he is using his finger to pointing at my eyes'

I shrugged at his side, "Blame whom?"

"Still angry, didn't I have compensated you last night, you were so high!"

High!

I am panicking, my face beet red and pinched him, "Nonsense!"

On the wedding night he had bitter me to death, the second night of the wedding he was really... let him to hurry the pace, he hurried, let him to slower the pace, he got slow, my face is speechless beet red, last night it seemed I was so high!

And then, thought about his face, my heart is aching, "still hurt?"

I have laid my hand too heavy!

Kang Yu is happily smiles said, "It is okay, as long as you high!"

I keep on pinching him, "Still say, you still dare to say, aren't you shame!"

From inside the kitchen to outside he is uttering nonsense, I chase him while he is running, this time, Po Po is coming in to look for us who alike crazy, coughed one time, "That, Yu Er, what we going to eat for lunch!"

Hurried I put away the rag clothes, stand up straight, I am not daring to look at her.

Kang Yu as if have eaten honey replied: "Dine out, Mom I will take you to eat seafood, eat at western restaurant!"

**

Note:

1] 新 Xin 婚 Hun 燕 Yan 尔 Er : Happy Wedding Couple, newlywed.
the idiom meaning, in ancient time, there was a woman who being abandoned by her playboy husband, so she was crying miserably in the street. There were local people asked her: "Why your husband abandoned you?" this abandoned wife sad and anger said: "That jerk man has already had new love, now he is busying having fun with his new beloved!" after said, then wringing to sing a song about resentful wife.

2] 亲 Qin 家 Jia 公 Gong : Bride's father

3] 亲 Qin 家 Jia 母 Mu : Bride's Mother

It is the call for the bride's / bridegroom's parent to the spouse's parent.

4] 金 Jin 茂 Mao 大 Da 厦 Sha : Jin Mao Tower or Jin Mao building

Jinmao Building or **Jinmao Tower**, is an 88-story (93 if counting the floors in the spire) landmark skyscraper in Lujiazui, Pudong, Shanghai, China. It is 420.5 metres (1,380 feet) tall and is the 18th tallest building in the world. It contains a shopping mall, offices and the Grand Hyatt Shanghai hotel. (source: Wiki). This building is third tallest building in China now.

5] 东 Dong 方 Fang 明 Ming 珠 Zhu 塔 Ta : Oriental Pearl Tower

Its location at the tip of Lujiazui in the Pudong district by the side of Huangpu River, opposite The Bund, makes it a distinct landmark in the area. Its principal designers were Jiang Huan Chen, Lin Benlin, and Zhang Xiulin. Construction began in 1991, and the tower was completed in 1994. At 468 m (1,535 feet) high (Source : Wiki)

28.2

Chapter 28

Part 2 (Two)

Newlywed

At evening, chatting with Po Po, Po Po is used to sleep early, so not long after that she falls asleep, Kang Yu and I back to our room, he is knowing the taste is good so wanted to try again*, just very similar with last time when he kissed me first time, he is very excited alike tireless horse.

I am frustrating to think about it, before the wedding night, I urged him, he didn't want but after the wedding night he even hurried to 'rough'.

This man is really can be live so boringly, but also can be so coquettish, when the words are combined it really 'Man show'.

While me will be overwhelmed with sorrow and joy, suffer unspeakably. After feeling tormenting for few days, I really couldn't bear it anymore, I kick him down from bed, "Even though machine, at least you must let it having rest for one or two days, can't let it keep on working!"

After Kang Yu listened, his head down, pinching the pillow, with pitiful expression heading to living room.

Surprisingly I asked him: "Where are you going?"

He is complaining said: "Sleep on sofa!"

"Why?" couldn't he endure only for two days, can't he endure it?

He is talking as is resented wife, said to me, "Miao Miao, the sexual activity in marriage, at least at three years."

"....."

I am speechless to heaven.....

**

After few days, Po Po could not stay anymore, one because of the culture differences, second because of the meal, especially for the meal, she could not digest, the Shanghainese no matter what types of dishes they cook must add

sugar, even when stir frying the vegetable still added sugar, it is about main course. Northeast people like noodle as main course, what dumpling, Wo Tou (Corn Bread), Bao Zi (Buns), Mian Ge Da (Dough ball). The Shanghainese main course is rice, although I have tried my best to cook according to her taste but Po Po still feeling uncomfortable, anxious wanted to back to Fu Shun.



Wo Tou



Steam Bun



Type of pastry



Mian Da Ge soup

Kang Yu and I could not do anything, best thing we bought her train ticket because the elders don't like airplane, rather than using airplane better to ride train, anyway, those aunties are accompanying her back, in train they could chit chat so not boring, playing cards, 'chirping', 20 hours could be easily passing.

Before Po Po leaving, she wanted to meet her younger brother, he is Kang Yu's uncle who does business in Shanghai, when Kang Yu heard it, his face darken, how could not dark, when he was studying, he had suffered from his uncle family, not to mention, even when we were getting married, he not even told them, how could I don't know his character, he is someone bearing grudge.

Po Po knew that she would not win over him, so that she gave up her idea, bought the specialty food with Aunty Zhang, happily went home.

There is time I really admires my mother in law speaking skill, she was talking about mummy, Kang Yu and I are planning to go honeymoon to Egypt.

Kang Yu asked her to rest assured, so that she feel assured, and then she ‘chirping’ few words, doesn’t know whether she intentional or not, and then she spoke to Kang Yu, “If daughter in law has movement, you must hurry tell me, I will immediately buy train ticket come here!”

Movement! I distressed, what means by movement?

At sudden Kang Yu nodding his head, making fun of me who is muddle headed.

After sent Po Po off, I asked him, “Yu, what did Po Po mean by movement when she talked to you?”

Kang Yu hands are in steering wheel, at sudden one of his hand out and stroking my lower abdomen, “Miao Miao, there is always a harvest of hard work, you can’t let me to work for free labor.”

I am dumbfounded for moment, but quickly I understood, my face is red burn hot.

I am this type of person, once I feel shy, I will panicking, once I am panicking, all my speech are not passing my brain.

“Well... let us... must we... work harder!”

Kang Yu’s eyes are gleaming brightly very similar with bulb, praising, “Miao Miao, this idea really good, you seat steady, I will speed up!”

“Why are you driving so fast?” there is nothing to do at home.

“You said, work harder when at home.” The way he spoke as if knew the business was but deliberately asked, that kind of speaking tone, while his expression is extremely happy.

“.....”

Finally he got an excuse to torment me.

**

My honeymoon and Kang Yu are planned on 19 November, the destination is Egypt, not go with group, we are freely to have our travel, according to Kang Yu

explanation if we followed tour we don't have freedom, the time could not being planned by us, if during the night we are having burning intimate night, couldn't wake up early in the morning, even to have one 'warm' we could not have, it really so boring, better we go by ourselves, we free to do whatever we want.

I think he is obviously for an intimate travel.

But honeymoon must be like this.

Fortunately for the entire trip—from the plane ticket we have saved, because due to the German LTU Airline pilot's welfare, the pilot himself and also the pilot's family can have free flight twice a year, the benefit from the airlines not limited to here, although it has passed two times, still able to buy the ticket at the lowest price.

It really one happy thing which able to make one's laughing while sleeping.

An earlier I do also want to be pilot, have high salary, the benefit is good, still able to travel around the world without need to spend much money, really good, but I have thought too, I do only have ability to sit in airplane. I have yearned for Egypt since I was in Junior High school, all because of (Ni Luo Ke Nu Er / Crest of Royal Family) this comic, but it little bit irritated me because until now it hasn't ended, actually there is a rumor among the fans saying the author might have seen God, just hear it, anyway now I have (Detective Conan) for my craving, still bearable!

But regarding to Ramses II from (Red River*) comic, I do really wanted to fly as soon as possible, to stand in front of his big statue.

Of course this matter I can't let Kang Yu know, or else beating him to death he would not bring me comes to Egypt for honeymoon.

Kang Yu and I are arrived at Doha, Qatar and then we transit to Cairo, because the airplane to Cairo is delayed, so we are having sightseeing in Doha city for bit, arrived at overseas, Kang Yu is speaking English as fluent as mother tongue so beneficial, I don't need to worry something alike chicken and duck languages (talking in different languages as barrier) this thing.

After we are in Cairo, Kang Yu and I are book good hotel—Sonseta Cairo Hotel and Casino, the hotel is located in Cairo, Heliopolis district which is ten

minutes from airport and also the main central of Cairo, including the Pyramids, Khan El Khalili, and big city Citadelc. This five stars hotel is so suitable for the leisure travelers, the facilities are completed, I am also can surf the internet shamelessly to Yan Yan, show off to my younger sister.

Ten mill south west of Cairo, the Giza district, there are three Great Pyramids, the Khufu's Pyramid complex, Khafre's Pyramid complex and Menkaure's Pyramid complex are refer as three great pyramids (The Great Pyramids). Among those most famous pyramids, there is also Sphinx, naturally it is our first stop.

Note:

*] 食 Shi 隨 Sui 知 Zhi 味 Wei: The bone is taste good so want to try again. this words are commendation word. It is used to describe thieves or men/women who had affair and so on. The core meaning is after did one time and not being caught so that wanted to continue to do it again for the second time; this word also can interpret someone to satisfy the moment greed or freshness about something which done it in stimulus and would like to continue it in the future and it may turn to be habit. (source: baidu)

****] 憶 Men 騷 Sao: Man Show**

the free translation for Men Sao is Man Show due to the paraphrase. Men 憶 means bored / boring and frowsty, while 騷 sao means coquettish. When the words are combined it becomes 'Man show' but not derogatory term which used in Macao, Hongkong and Taiwan as slang word.

28.3

Chapter 28

Newlywed

Part 3 (Three)

November first the average temperature of Egypt is 23 degrees, not hot but so comfortable, but the differences between day and night are extremely different, when night the temperature can be only 12 degrees, but in the morning the sun shines strongly, I am so out of sun, after get sun burn 1 to 2 hours my skin will red and little bit itchy, when night arrive at hotel, the skin even peeling after bath.

I am so shocked to pale, “Disfigured, disfigured!”

The result Kang Yu tricked me, “Don’t be afraid, just licked it will be alright!”

“Lick?”

Kang Yu nodding, seriously said, “The old saying indeed right, saliva is disinfect.”

Reasonable!

Who will lick, my tongue isn’t that long.

Positive thinking, he is so excited to put me on the bed, “Naturally it’s me who will do it!”

At the moment he behaves good, licking and licking at my peeling skin, and then starting to exhilarate, “Miao Miao, lick all the body, okay, it better to do prevention!”

After said, he has already pressed me down, bring me with guilt rolling in the bed.

Licking and rolling = making love.

The second and the third day, I could not get off from bed...

**

Since we are in Egypt, of course we must buy the local product or else the fellow good sisters will gang up to fight, the Egyptian Cyperus Papyrus painting and also oil essential are the most famous, so I took Kang Yu to Papyrus shop and also perfume shop.

The Cyperus Papyrus painting, the important isn't the painting itself but painting paper. Because in an ordinary paper pulp the paint color will not reach the best result, only in the paper of Cyperus Papyrus the painting of the ancient Egyptian civilization will looked vividly, simply to say I was so intoxicating with the Papyrus painting, and put Kang Yu aside.

When indulge looking at the painting, heavy as oil, precious as gold, a subtle color is like a delicate fragrance, with a variety of pure natural plant deployment of fragrant, I have been intoxicating, and finally added the difference attitude, using the gold color for the bottleneck, the base, the bottle neck or the bottle waist, is perfectly beautiful with Arabic flower fragrance glass bottle, even who is Kang Yu I have not remembered him anymore.

"Yu, tell the Boss (seller), I want all of them, let him to count it cheaper!" my pair of hand is holding big and small bottles, put all down in front of the cashier, pulling Kang Yu who is in my beside, let him using English to bargain with the boss.

Kang Yu with his dark face, "Who are you?"

"Huh?" I am confused.

**

Kang Yu and I are stayed 10 days in Cairo, 5.5 days are making love and the result 4.5 days both of us are playing in many places, The Egyptian Museum is one of longest time we stopped, and then we are taking night train to Luxor, heading to Nile river and west area.

Standing in the fields between the west bank of Nile and the valley of the King Colossi of Memnon, it said that in ancient time there would be humming sound from dawn to dusk, being called as "the most cry" statue, very spectacular and

beautiful, but after ‘who are you’ experienced, I don’t dare to go crazy (over excited), on the entire process only focus on Kang Yu, but when in valley of kings, Mortuary Temple of Hatshepsut, Luxor Temple, the Karnak Temple Complex, the degree of my focus toward Kang Yu gradually lessen.

As the result, I am lost.

This is not the most terrifying thing, when I was alone I realized being followed by the Egyptian little brat, I walked to where he also followed me to where, I could not avoid him, my mind thought, whether he wanted to rob or to rape.

Rape, I have already married.

Rob, I am too muddle head, so all the money is with Kang Yu.

What should I do in case he does not have anything to do?

Hence, I used my poor English asked him, “What do you want by following me?”

He used very Egyptian English to ask me, “I want to propose you!”

I was shocked, before I went to travel I have done little ‘homework’, the Egyptians have reported that there are imbalanced genre population, there are lots of man who not able to get wife, so that they have interested to the female tourist who are traveling alone to Egypt, especially the Asian women which be very common to pursuit.

Wooing! But the one which I encountered was not suitor but simply purposing marriage.

“I have married!” I said.

“It is okay, can divorce, I willing to use 50 chickens, 50 ducks and 10 camels as betrothal present (gift: Bride price), Please marry me!”

Never met this kind of marry proposal, even forcing other to divorce?

Seeing me not reacting, he said again, “If you feel not enough, I can add other 50 chickens. 50 ducks and 10 camels as the betrothal present, only can be this much!”

Dare to ask, am I worth 100 chickens, 100 ducks and 20 camels.

My head has three dark lines.

Leaving, quickly leaving.

He sees me wanted to leave, he stopped me at my in front, he even grabbed my arm.

I tried to let go myself while screaming, “Yu! Yu!”

I am wrong, I must not ignore you, I not dare, I not dare again.

“Miao Miao!” When the hero showing up, you will never know when and how he is showing up.

“Yu!” I run to him, crying out loud while hugging onto him.

The Egyptian comrade said, “Is he your husband?”

I was hiding at Kang Yu embraces, nodding hard and then I said to Kang Yu, “He wanted me to divorce you, marrying him, he even said that wanted to give me 100 chickens, 100 ducks and 20 camels as betrothal present.”

Kang Yu lowers his head while wipe my tears, “Miao Miao, it seems you are worth money!”

The dark lines in my head are adding more.

The Egyptian comrades do not know what he sees on me, facing Kang Yu said, “I like her!”

Kang Yu used English, “Private good, not transferable!”

“Base on what?”

Wo Kao, this Egyptian fellow perseverance.

Kang Yu with trickery face said, “Based on I am higher than you, more handsome than you, more than...” he is looked at the fellow Egyptian rolled his eyes, “White than you!”

The black fellow Egyptian stiffed, looking at Kang Yu with measuring, at last he went away with grievance.

After that, I was got strict lesson from Kang Yu, I knew I was wronged at the first so not dare to talk back to him.

Waiting until he was not angry anymore, finally I could relief.

But I still puzzled, actually what that Egyptian fellow looked from me?

At this time, the hotel's Tv is replay old movie about Cleopatra starring Elizabeth Taylor, there was a scene which Cleopatra volunteered herself to be Julius Caesar's woman.

Cleopatra said: "I have full hips which able to bear your child, I have full breast which able to breast feeding your children, I am the most beautiful woman in Egypt..." that several lines.

I have cold sweat...

And then I glanced at Kang Yu who was sleeping soundly while lying on my chest.

Finally I understood.

All men just same!

**

On the next trip, I just alike an octopus who tightly wrapped around Kang Yu, when I was in Ramses II statue, I not dare to glance twice, the Egyptian people recognition in beauty term is too practical, I didn't want to experience it anymore, but Kang Yu was extremely happy, he even let me to stay more few days in Egypt.

After stayed 5 weeks in Egypt, we set off to fly back to Shanghai.

When we are arrived at Shanghai, fortunately we are able to catch up with Christmas, by coincidences there was also heavy rain, the weather is cold like an ice, I shivered, although I have wore long Jacket but my hand and foot are cold. Kang Yu and I weren't going home to ours house but we were going to my parent's house, my father my mother knew both of us were coming home, afraid we hadn't good meal during in Egypt, prepared lot of food filled the table.

I just washed my hand, sitting in dining room, my mom was especially cooked Fish soup, still adding White Angelica (Dang Gui Bai) fish head soup, it said to let me and Kang Yu to get more nutrient, I craving it so much, but once I smell it, immediately I stood up and dashing to toilet to throwing out.

Kang Yu panic, my mom even more panic.

“Miao Miao, what happened?” Kang Yu is patting my back.

I have vomited the yellow gas liquid.

My mom is panic hurried screaming, “Miao Miao, are you pregnant?”

I was dumbstruck, Kang Yu also dumbstruck.

Hurried, a group of people sent me to get into car and directly go to hospital.

Urine test and also B ultrasound test.

Finally the chubby female doctor smile to me and said, “Congratulation, Miss, you will be mother soon!” and then she continued with the calculation of pregnancy week, and comparing the result with the B ultrasound test.

I dumbstruck, Kang Yu are more dumbstruck than me!

How to say, at our first time, we...had already!

Oh My God! He is too rushing!!

Chapter 29 (29.1)



Chapter 29

Part 1 (One)

The day of Pregnancy

“Ou Yang Miao Miao, you have gone much too far, you have gone much too far, you have gone much too far...” There are about 500 words of ‘you have gone much too far’.

After Classmate Ling Li spoke, take a beer bottle and drink it until filled the stomach, and then slammed down the beer bottle, with force of fierce, the table being shook surprisingly three times. “You have gone faster one step than everyone forget it, after all you dare to go faster two steps, you say, do you want to die, are you wanted to die!!!”

Xu Ying comes as the peace marker, “Please calm down, don’t frighten Miao Miao, now she is pregnant woman!!”

“Miao Miao, how’s it feel being pregnant woman?” Da Shuang and Xiao Shuang are curiously, their face is getting closer toward me while asking.

I stroking my lower abdomen, “It just over a month, there is no much feeling, when smells something fishy, especially fish I want to vomit, vomit and vomit until I feel dizzy!”

When we had been having a reunion again, actually after back from honeymoon, wanted to distribute the souvenirs, but who knew it turned out to be announcement banquet, telling them that I going to be mother soon.

Kang Yu because I am pregnant, today he went to company for applying short-term international flight, so that he will have more time to accompany and taking care of me, if he cannot accompany me, Yan Yan would be the my guard, but now she is eating hastily at beside.

Liu Li Jie is stroking her chin, her spectacles is flashing, “Wang Ye’s arrow, really awesome!”

My face is beet red, humph once.

“So what do you want to eat, spicy or sour?” Zong Li Jun asked.

"The way you asked are too old-fashioned, this won't work!" Fan Jun said, "I heard from my mom, when the pregnant woman is getting more beautiful, it is girl, an opposite it is boy!"

It seems, all of them are more excited to know whether the baby is boy or girl.

"What did Kang Yu say?" Sun Ling is helping me to fill bowl of Mushroom Soup, put it down in front of me, "Drink the soup, now you need to take care the nutrient."

I nodded, "He said it is okay to have either baby boy or baby girl, as long as it is his 'seed'!"

Other than Sun Li who spitting out beer, others are spitting out soup.

"He has said the important part!" Finally Liao Jia Ying explained.

"But I heard that Dong Bei people are weighted boys than girls moreover it is severe important!" Fan Jiao reminded me.

"This matter I do feel little bit worry, but this kind of matter, it is something that I could not do, the expert had said, giving birth to baby boy or girl, it is man problem, there is not our problems as women."

He gave me what kind of 'seed', I will born that kind of, I am only a piece of land!

"There is nothing to be worried for, all of you aren't witness how my brother in law looked alike when he knew big sister pregnant, simply to say he is exactly same alike hen, kukukukuku around big sister!" it is so obvious Yan Yan has done eating, she is starting to join the conversation.

"En! Can be imagined!" Sun Li looked at me with envious expression, "Miao Miao, do you know that you really have dog shit luck, after all you able to catch this type good quality man!"

Good quality man?

"Do you know what kind of standard that set for most of today's men? It is driving sport car, sharing a house, good fighter. Able to wash the diapers, brushing the old wall, knowing to repair computer, moving the refrigerator. Resist temptation, good at flattering father and mother in law (wife's parent),

being loyal to wife, stick with wife no matter when going out or at home, very obviously Kang Yu is this type of man!"

I got cold sweat....

Xiao Shuang has questioned, "So what is good woman standard?"

Sun Lin gulping her beer, "Got on hall, good cook, able to kill Trojan, flip over the wall, dare to fight the mistress, acting alike scoundrel."

For once again I got cold sweat, it seems my strength only become good cook.

Ling Li seems to be shocked by me, after she drunk, she sighed, "It has been few years since I graduated from school, I rent house, the toilet seat has never been lifted in toilet..."

Ugh... This words sound so sad.

I cannot bear so I said, "It is you who has high requirement!" it is not alike no one pursuing her, since the university until today, at least there were few groups men, but none of them able to catch her interest, what to do.

People said, human life is alike sitting in one big bus, there must be bus stop that belong to you, while the left over men and women are those who missed out the bus stop. Some are excuse sitting inside the bus is more comfortable, not willing to get down, some are excuse does not know which bus stop, while those who are decided not to get married is the bus driver, every day sees people get in and get down, has been already so boring.

Suddenly she is shamelessly said, "I also want to get married, I also want!"

Others than she and Yan Yan, all of them have already had boyfriends, seeing her hatred expression, all are not dare to say anything to shock her.

29.2



Chapter 29

The Day of Pregnancy

Part 2 (Two)

When Kang Yu picked me and Yan Yan back to home, I have told him about Ling Li's matter.

Kang Yu said, "En, after seeing her hard work for many years, regardless of the efforts, well listen to me, when I have time I will help her to search! Oh yeah, Miao Miao, when we were married, didn't she have any fancies toward the best man!"

I shook my head, "You don't look her such unruly, there is time she can be more stubborn than me!"

"Well, when I back to company I will look for, if there is someone good, I will help to introduce to her!"

Yan Yan panicking, she turned her head at back, "Brother in law, you better to help me solve my problem first, I am yours sister in law, we are family!"

Kang Yu glared at her, using his nose humph, it has counted as giving her an answer.

This humph sound, it makes Yan Yan's head feel numb and turned back to her original place.

Other people are working hard, she does so, but others are paid at all cost, but she does not, she has received too many.

So that, Kang Yu won't let anyone to take any advantage from him.

Perhaps Yan Yan now is having heart to give up.

It seems that Kang Yu not 'earn' much, he said again, "Person like you who similar to Xiao Long Nu (condor of heroes), it is not important who will be Yang Guo, the most important is who will be Jun Zhi Ping..."

I have cold sweat...

This words are really too poisonous!

Yan Yan sitting at back seat has already shock to the point unconscious.

Geez...when you was young said that you were black, blacken, how could you suppress Kang Yu who has already at God level.

After sending off Yan Yan, Kang Yu is carefully help me on the way go home, since I was pregnant, he acts like this, as if, if there was wind, it might be able to blow me away.

During the pregnancy, his desires was convergence, simply to say he was back at the state before get married, there was a time I really admire him, he could acting such comfortable.

Just expected he was really an alien.

After taking bath, I was lying at bed cannot fall asleep, not be able to endure, I teased him.

At the beginning Kang Yu was so calm, not long after suddenly he got up from bed, his breathing unsteady, "Miao Miao, you go sleep first!"

"How's about you?"

His face was dim, masking his face with fervent expression, "Let me go to study room to practice my Wu Long Bao Zhu (simply to say Kang Yu is doing 'Men's need')!!!"

After said, he turned and left.

"....."

I have cold sweat alike heavy rain...

This man is enough Show Man!!!

**

Three months pregnancy, after the period of tocolysis, I went to work, if I took a leave again, I must prepare to go back to my house to have forever leave.

The current job is the job that found after Uncle Shen passed away, it is automotive customer service for Germany brand car, commonly known as service center.

Ling Li and I are work at same company, although both of us are graduated from Fu Dan university majority in journalism, but both of us don't have any ambition, so never thought to search job that suitable to our major, such as become MC (host), reporters (the people who work in media), in big city alike Shanghai, it is so difficult to find a job that match with study major, unless you have strong back up or have good connection, or else should look for other for developing.

Both Ling Li and I are people who mingle in society only to spend days.

This job, I feel quite happy, also I have known many new friends, it is so similar with the time during I was still in school, all are women, I always have good luck with women, while with men not really.

According to Ling Li said, why must I need to have good relationship with men, I have Kang Yu which similar to have all the trees in forest, why do I need to fight with others?

Well, I just think it as right.

My current position is Team Leader, it is the legendary Junior Management, the total subordinate is 16 persons, all are youngsters, easy to communicate, normally fooling around, it quite happy.

Sun Ke Zhen nickname Ake, Shanghainese, is one of my fellow sisters in company, she has skin as white as snow white skin tone, slim waist, tall and beautiful woman, everything is good, but she has poisonous tongue.

Ling Li almost jumped from building because of her poisonous tongue.

Ling Li comes from quite good family, although in Shanghai she rent house, her Dong Bei father has bought her a car to ride instead walking, hence most of the working class employees who work in company, car is regarding as luxurious items.

Ling Li isn't top management, coming to work place with car, using car which priced 300,000, of course it makes people hatred and envious, we as fellows sister do not mind, but this brat loves to show off, after she had been showing off, let Ake had to give her lesson.

"So what having a car? Do you have a man?"

This is one of a normal teasing among fellow good sisters, it isn't real, but every time Ling Li heard it, it gives her big strike, because among all the fellow sisters only she who still single, doesn't have man, does not have husband.

Every time Ake provoke her, she would hug me and cried.

Second is Wei Hong Yu, nickname Nancy, come from Gui Lin, she has petite posture, when entered the company she was so petite, after few years she get fatter, but still small, she is the legendary Sister Yu, her aura no one can compare with.

Her husband is our supervisor, since she entered the company, he had been pursuing her, he is types of man who wait and looking for opportunity before

make movement, after few years followed alike follower finally able to win over her.

The third is Wang Yan, nickname Angel, she is also come from Gui Lin, she and Wei Hong Yu were classmate when they were in Senior High and also university, fellow student which turned to be co-workers, they are as close as sibling, she has a husband who looked similar with Kang Yu in term of feeling and romance, both of them ever broke up before, two year later they had encountered again, very quick they got the spark back, and then they had flashed marriage.

The fourth is Xu Jing, nickname Yuki, she is the one who latest joining the company, a type of woman who has character as an understanding wife and also loving mother. Her husband is also our Senior staff for the production team, that good looking man is little bit playboy, not long ago her husband ever had ambiguous relationship with one of female employee, but Xiao Xu really patient, not making commotion, acted as if seen nothing, using this gentle method to kill you, let her husband come back to pay attention toward her.

My these fellow sister colleagues are awesome, everyone has their own uniqueness, only me who is not have any bit of uniqueness, the most proud of me only I have especially unique husband.

Geez, I am reflecting on myself.

29.3



Finally we come to the end. This Novel ended at Chapter 29 and this is the last part. I won't say good bye to this project now because it still has two side stories and one Epilogue.

I am going to wrap all the rest within this month so, stay tune and enjoy your reading....

Chapter 29

The Day of Pregnancy

Last Part

I got scold by my boss fully thirty minutes, said that I had married, had honeymoon, all I had already used my 10 years working -leave, I stood straight to hear his lesson, I was little bit too over, married-leave, year-leave, maternity leave, which company would be able to stand with these, not directly fired me, it had counted as being humanity.

After being scold, I got back to my own office room.

I could see fellow sisters eyesight, all of them were extending their hand, "Present."

Ling Li had gotten earlier, so that she wasn't there, hurried I took out the present—distributed all of it, I heave deep sigh when sitting at my seat, this group of people were heartless, they didn't even comfort me.

When it was the time to get off from work, they even forced me to treat them meals, reason—when I am in absent, who will do my works?

My purse was shrinking as thin as paper.

**

When the pregnancy was already 4 months, mother in law was hurrying come, at the beginning of pregnancy she had thought to come, but Kang Yu said Shanghai in winter, afraid it would tough for her, asked her to wait until spring when the flower blooming and then coming to here, mother in law agreed, she also told Kang Yu not need to visit her in Fu Shun during new year, just taking good care of me.

Mother in law was staying a month, she was perfectly taking good care of me, but just too much regulation, furthermore it was very traditional ones, could not

eat this, should not do that, even watching anime, She had been restricting me to watch an anime, after some time, I really could not bear it anymore.

Fortunately due to her nature that not accustomed with Shanghai so not stay longer, after one month she left, she said when I am going to have labored, she would come back.

5 months of Pregnancy, my stomach had been as big as balloon, my waist could not hold, sleeping during night was also not comfortable, and then had habit wanted to eat something, though in the middle of night, I must eat it, Kang Yu was quiet spoiling me, as long as I wanted to eat, he would make it, if he couldn't cook it he would go and buy it, but pregnant woman indeed strange, when wanted to eat must be got to eat, when it done, have bought, suddenly didn't want to eat anymore, but he never shown any unhappy expression or impatience, it made me feel touching.

I really love him to bone.

6 months pregnancy, I had used with the stomach weight, and starting to be so energetic, our company has special treatment toward pregnant woman, no need to go to work, until the labor time.

I was so happy staying at home, eating snacks, taking nap, watching anime and read comic, the days quite comfortable, doing nothing could surfing internet.

Everyone knows, I am a dog lover, because I am so crazy about dog, as long as I spotted things that related to dog, I won't let it go.

Sanitary utensils, eating utensils, clothes that wear at home, pajamas, slippers, mobile phone, mobile phone accessories, bags, alarm, even underwear, as long as dog pattern, I would buy it.

It's not only for my stuffs, even Kang Yu's stuffs turned to be Doggies pattern.

Recently, I have been doing online shopping, I have spotted couple pants, I like it so much, hurried I made the purchase.

The next day, The courier have delivered it directly to my hands.

When Kang Yu seen the little panties, his face turned green, firmly he said, "Not going to wear it."

“Wear it, Yu, it is so cute!” I begged him.

“I won’t wear it even I die!”

“Don’t you think they are so cute?” More I take a look more I like it.

“It is only you who think it cute! I am a man asking me to wear such pant, I rather to jump to Yang Tze river, make contribution to the small three Gorges River!”

“Wear it, it made from cotton, comfortable.... We don’t talk about the pattern, just say about the fabric. CK brand is recognized as best!”

“Don’t wear it I feel more comfortable!!”

“.....” I felt slightly unhappy, “You are really not going to wear it.”

“Not wear!”

I extended out my hand, pointing at his nose, “Alright, you have gut, don’t wear...I wear it by myself.” Two becomes four, I also not lose anything.

After said, I walked to room and tried to wear it.

But....

Very fast, I had out from my room with pity expression, “Yu...”

Kang Yu thought I haven’t been giving up, very firmly said, “I have said that I would not wear it.”

“It’s not, Yu...I... It seems getting fatter, I could not wear it, even man’s pants I could not wear it, what to do?” because of the dog pattern, I didn’t take notice of the size, and also, I am pregnant woman!!!! If I can wear it real strange!!!

“.....”

Online shop has made rule that thing had bought could not refund.....

Huhuhuhuhuhuhu.....

**

When the pregnancy at 7 months, I have been starting to be lazy, I always lying down at bed and not willing to move, but no matter how I lying down, I felt bored, reading comic book, while Japanese anime only one episode one week,

really could not satisfy my craving, Kang Yu suggested me to watch TVB Hongkong drama, I thought the idea was not bad, so during strolling at night, There was stall selling DVD's disc.

The DVD's stall was selling Hongkong Drama [Triumph in The Skies], it was drama describe about professional aviation job, because Kang Yu is a pilot, I felt interested of it, watched it completely.

After I watched it, I had decided, that was—I wanted to be Captain's wife.

Captain's wife!!! NND (ni niang de, it has equal meaning with TMD / ta de ma) Damn it!, too awesome.

But, it still long way to go for Kang Yu to become Captain, still far away, little bit far from reach.

Under this circumstance, I have only thought it as day dreaming.

“Yu, if now you are Captain, it will be great!!”

“.....” Kang Yu pretended not heard.

“It might earn more money than currently.” I never denied myself as woman who loves money.

“.....” He still pretended not to hear anything.

“If you were Captain, I wanted to travel around the world, I want to live in three storey Villa house, and also, I want to have group of maids surrounded me, Madam, Madam, called me.”

I was so boring to the point I could not control myself to make up my dream.

Suddenly Kang Yu drank a glass of milk held by his hand, that milk actually taken for me.

I didn't pay attention, I had forgotten, “I also want to pet 6, no, 12 Alaskan Malamute, making it into group of sled dog, when the time come, I could go to Switzerland to play ski, hahahaha....

After Kang Yu drank the milk, he drank another glass of mineral water, drink alike ox....

“After I played to my fullest, other than the one inside the stomach, I will born

another one for you.” Happily I pulled his sleeping robe.

Kang Yu knew that he could not pretended to deaf mute, took a deep breathe, said, “I am going to make phone call?”

“Who will you call?”

He said sternly, “I am going to call Osama Bin Laden.”

“Ha?”

“I want to ask him, does he still want to hit something alike Pentagon building?”

“.....”

He heave a sighed, continuing, “Miao Miao, rest assured, I will ask him to give me more family allowance, guarantee it will be satisfied your requirement.”

I forced my mouth twitched.

He was talking so enthusiastically about the matter, and then hold my shoulder, with sorrow tone he said, “There will be 12 Alaskan Malamute and also group of maid taking care of you, I think you may live happily, but you must remember, remember about our unborn baby and also the one in your stomach, their father is someone great.”

He made fist with his hand, put it in his chest, his tear flowing down.

Twitched, twitched, I could feel my skin twitching, my head nerve were appearing.

Kang Yu lifted his head up still with his tearing face, “But, Miao Miao, before I hit pentagon building, I want to enjoy the process of my children birth as much as possible, I hope you will be agreed.”

Finally, my nerve in my head going to explode, I took the sofa cushion and hit it to Kang Yu’s face.

Since that day, I never brought the topic wanting to be Captain’s wife.

At least within 30 years I won’t, because I don’t want to be widow.

**

When my pregnancy entered 8 months, I had watched a recorded about a man who cheated on his pregnant wife, I was bit depressed, perhaps I had pressured before labor, perhaps I was too nervous, whatever I was over thought, I didn't know whether this also a sickness of pregnant woman, but I had been started to suspicious.

I had suspicious Kang Yu had mistress!

But I didn't clearly told him, but I used suspicious eyesight to see him, but he always good tempered to comfort me, but it didn't make me feel at ease, whatever I always think he treated me good because he had reason.

This performance, It made Kang Yu had drunk beer, once he drinking he would drunk, I didn't know his real reason why he gone out to have drink, always think that he gone off with woman.

It angered me until smashed things in house.

Seeing he lying down at bed, I was flaring up asking him to wake up, but he drunk alike death, still wearing his pilot uniform snoring and fell asleep, thought that he might not comfortable wearing uniform while sleep so I helped to change his dress.

When I took off his pants, I just touched his belt, suddenly he awake, with his drunken eyes, he looked at me so fiercely, looking at me as if I was stranger, he used so much strength to sway away my hand, my hand's back red.

He never hit me before, he also never so fierce to me.

I wanted to cry.

Kang Yu said, "Get lost, I am the person who already have wife!!"

After he said, he faint and slept back.

I was standing beside the bed, dumbfounded stood up, that word, 'Get lost, I am the person who already have wife!' it kept playing at my ears.

My tears we flowing down and kneeling beside the bed, crying out loud.

I cried because I felt touched.

In this world, the person who shouldn't doubt about him, must be me!!

No medicine to cure my suspicion.

**

When my pregnancy entered 9 months, Kang Yu had accompanied me to do check up and screening (USG), I had met my old classmate during my first year in Senior high, she also came to do check up, her husband is so handsome alike foreigners, handsome alike Apollo.

As the saying goes, as long as woman there is always a little vanity heart, especially living in Shanghai, the desire for materialism is so strong in this big city, the vanity heart will be more inflating, regarding to this point, I don't have any excuse to make denial, because I am born under Virgo star, from 12 zodiacs, Virgo is perfectionism among of 12 zodiac sign. Although I have little of it, this vanity heart isn't something shameless because it is state of mind comparison between one's self with others who own better, but most of time, it won't showing up, the most only make a complain to husband.

When I knew my old classmate married to one super handsome man who is Swiss, this is kind of life and death state of mind.

One word, after had dinner, nothing to do so looking for amusement.

After went home, I started to show women' starry eyed infatuation expression.

"Yu, that man is so handsome, he is also Switzerland people!!!

Kang Yu lifted his head up from computer, glancing at me, replied me with, "En..."

"So good, can marry to foreigner, really envy."

"En..." Kang Yu rolled his eyes, answered me.

"I heard he is Viking descendant, a viking, really so handsome, really wanted to marry someone like that man."

Sailor, this such dreamie, really makes one's drunken.

Finally Kang Yu reacted.

"Humph, Blonde devil!!!

"He is handsome man!"

He cannot stay still, stood up, dashed into my in front, his face already darken, got closer to me, glaring at me.

I was feeling cold sweat and flesh creep, but I won't back off, I glared him back.

After sometime, he exploded, "The great thing about him, he is only a sailor."

"Ha?"

"Sky is broader than sea."

"Ha?"

He chest out, "I am the person who flight airplane, so that I am better than him, humph humph..."

I got cold sweat....

But---

"Yu, actually being able to flight airplane isn't really something extraordinary."

"I know."

"So why you still said it."

Kang Yu sneered, "HaHa, because from all the men you have known, it's only me who can flight the airplane!!!"

Cold sweat!!!

He... He was right!!!

Special Chapter : Kang Yu revenge (1)



Special Story

Kang Yu's Revenge

Special Story 1.1

When Kang Yu was at 2 years old, his father had just changed his surname to Ai Xin Jue Luo.

The story begun, most of the descendants who had Ai Xin Jue Luo surname had changed their surname into others surname after the Revolution, such as Zhao, Luo, Jin, or others, the reason because if they didn't change their surname they were hard to escape from feudal during the Revolution in Chinese history, until the reformation, some had changed back and some hadn't.

After changed the surname, Kang Yu's father also didn't escape from the revolution, he had accused to be criminal, being prison 13 years before released, and then working as vehicle mechanic for living.

When Kang Yu was at 3 years old, his father passed away, his mother is

someone hard-working also good person, relied on farming for living, when Kang Yu was at 6, in order to have better live, Kang Yu's mother moved from Fu Shun to Shanghai, but got snubbed, because of money problem, Kang Yu's mother stayed at Shanghai for while, working at Shanghai Ming Hang district as labor in one of pioneer production company, also looked for place to stay, at least to stay for while.

When Kang Yu at 6 he was so cute, very strong, also little bit quiet, didn't like to play, perhaps because his father had passed away in the early days, made him maturer compare to others kids at his age, compare to weak Shanghai kids who were growing up under parent protection, simply to say Kang Yu was more look alike small adult, who was doing farming and house chores which done perfectly by him.

Many are the descendants of the royal family, it said to be descendant of Prince Chun first rank, his personality was very strong, after went through short period, he turned to be little boss among the kids group.

Kang Yu personality is so stubborn, as long as he has acknowledge something, usually he would go straight until the end, he would not turn around, as example there was one time when he sent lunch for his mother, he was choosing the shortest path, very difficult to pass, for little kids it almost similar alike go uphill and down dale, but he didn't want to change his path, encountered obstacles, he used his feet to kick, if cannot kick by his feet, he would bent down, couldn't bent down then he would climb up, whatever he stills need to go by this path.

When Kang Yu was little his family environment wasn't good, what kind of things (expensive or luxurious stuffs) he never had it, even for meal, within one month he had 20 days eating carrot with white rice, he never complained before, he only could use his brain to find a way how to get more vegetable for his house, for example knowing little boys, playing flap cards, won over their snacks, or during playing water gun, won over their beverages, although he didn't like to play, but as long as he could win over the stuffs, we would do.

One day, the production manufacturing contracted the farmland where his mother worked in to send dinner, on the way back he saw a little yellow dog, cute and chubby, he went up and teased it, his teasing the animal actually a bit weird, he crouched, using the tree branch poking it, the little dog (puppy)

perhaps only 3 months, being teased by him, woofing.

Suddenly, a little loud voice but affectedly sweet calling out from his back, “Why are you bullied little dog!!”

Kang Yu turned his head, stunned his eyes gleaming, he never seen little girl who looked alike western doll, from her looked she was about 4 or 5 years old, looked alike root of sprout, curly hair slightly dark brown with bright-color-eyes, so big and also round, skin looked so soft and tender, she looked dirty, a white dress all covered with dirt, she wore pair of red leather shoes which also covered by dirt, but she was so beautiful and also cute.

Little girl was looked angry, dashed in front, her mouth was blaming, “You should not bully little dog, you see you have scared it.”

Kang Yu wanted to say, I didn’t bully it, only teasing it, but no matter what, from the little girl eyes she saw the tree branch as weapon to bully the little dog.

When he was trying to explain, little girl has already punch him, hit him.

Without any preparation, Kang Yu was being attacked.

But he didn’t expect that little girl who looked alike bean sprout had such strength, holding his burn hot face wanted to fight back, but the little girl didn’t give any opportunity, one of her feet stomped at his stomach, she even used her strength to step on him twice, she scolded him: “You dare to bully little dog, you dare to bully!”

Kang Yu was flaring up, grabbed the little girl feet, counter attack, but he didn’t realise little girl fast reaction, she grabbed his arm, her mouth bite him.

The pain let him to shout out loud.

Her teeth was simply sharpen that the little dog’s.

He pulled back his hand, seeing his hand bleeding and also teeth mark.

The little girl humped, very quick kicked him, he’s been attacked, being hit he really didn’t know how to react, little girl hasn’t seem to stop, looking around to look for thing, unexpectedly saw a red brick, very fast run, picked it, and came back.

She threaten, “If you are not getting lost, I will use this brick, toss it to you!”

Kang Yu has been hit by her to the point his face green and swollen, very angry, but his brain was so clearly once little girl panic, she really would toss that brick, the person who got hurt must be he, so he stood up, step backward.

Good man would not fight with woman.

Kang Yu grinning while thinking, seeing she was playing so dirty, she must live nearby, Man revenge takes ten years won't be late, he would have chance to revenge.

Won't fight her first,

Hence, he left with anger.

Since that day he was starting to find about who was that little girl, from few little fellows, he found out that little girl was the production team leader's eldest daughter, her name called Ou Yang Miao Miao, whoever daughter she is, since she dared to hit him, she must pay for the price.

He had prepared for few days, he took few of his fellow friends who he had won over to go for taking revenge.

Although he was went for revenge, but hitting little girl, he would lose his face if doing so, so he planned to threaten her.

Secretly coming over little girl's in front house, little girl's house had small garden, it was surrounding by steel fence, quite tall, but with his height he could see little girl movement, he stood there to watch over her.

Little Girl was playing with dog in the garden.

One little yellow dog, and also one...

(2)



Special Story

Kang Yu's Revenge

Special Story 1.2

Kang Yu spotted one huge dog, that was the first time he saw such big dog, seen the dog opened it's mouth, it showed white big teeth, little girl is laughing happily, while he was having cold sweat, such big dog, after all she not even afraid of it, she even stretched out her hand to the dog's teeth.

He who was seeing it having cold sweat.

Didn't she afraid bite by it?

This moment, little girl said, "Bei Bei, good, you are going to born little puppies soon, don't randomly moves."

It gave a feeling alike dog's mother.

No matter what breed the dog was, with that big size, it must be scared

people.

Actually he wanted to frighten her by going inside her house, but after seen such big dog, how could he do it?

If the dog surprised, gone crazy, bite him, what to do then?

Better to postpone it, waiting until little girl being alone then he would go according plan.

Waiting for three hours, the big dog wasn't even moving little bit from little girl, so that he didn't have any opportunity to revenge.

Sky was gradually dark, he was only going home.

After few days, he came back again, beside the little girl was standing that big dog.

Even until one month, every day he was standing in front her house, but everyday there was no chance for him to take revenge.

When he was waiting until the little girl alone, he didn't do it, he had waited for one month, he knew many things, he knew that little girl health not really good, so that her parent didn't let her out recently, so she was playing inside the garden, it seems that her heart not really good, if he really scared her and she got heart attack, what should he do?

He was scratching his head, when there was a big dog he could not do it, when she was alone he also couldn't do it, how should he take this revenge?

He depressed and frustrated, rake up meal, his face was darken.

During night, several people in the neighborhood were watching television around the yard, he also went, anyway it was free, not his television, why not went to watch.

Kids and adults, young and old, all were seriously watching the television, but there was a commotion.

It were husband and wife arguing, this wife and husband are always arguing once big argue in five days, once small in three days, both of them arguing such similar with having meal, before there was someone came as mediator, later no matter how to persuade still arguing.

Pretending not to see, pretending not to hear.

After sometime, the man was kicking the door, he was cursing.

Inside the yard, person with surname Zhao could not bear anymore, he said to that man, "You say why you married her before, not spending good life, all that along so noisy."

That man replied, "I have revenge with her, so that I married her, by this way I can enslave her everyday, let her to wash my clothes, cook food, and also let her born my kids! Is it your business?"

After said, the man was going to have beer.

The people who known it knew, it was anger words.

But Kang Yu didn't understand, he just 6...

Sometimes kids understanding is so naive.

In his brain the words '*I have revenge with her, so that I married her, by this way I can enslave her everyday, let her to wash my clothes, cook food, and also let her born my kids!*' repeatedly playing.

This way can revenge.

His eyes were flashed, perhaps this would do.

Alright!

He had decided!

He wanted to marry her!

But how to marry her?

Whatsoever, anyway he must marry her.

After that, he was starting to find a way how to get close with the little girl, and then... Humph humph (smiles with smug expression).

But before he had chanced to get closer with the little girl, he and his mother had already gone back to their old house, but this thought always there, never disappeared, because he always think of her, the little girl was filled in his mind, no matter what, he could not forget her.

15 years that year, mother had used much money also consideration, once again to let him came to Shanghai, at the moment let him to stay at his uncle's house, uncle's house wasn't far away from his childhood place, that manufacturing place, according to his memories, he was coming back to that little girl's in front house.

Reminiscence old days, but those who lived there had already moved, the manufacturing company also disappeared, he also heard that little girl's father has his own business.

Didn't know how she grow? The teeth mark in his hand still there, so that he still wanted to revenge.

Suddenly the front door being opened, at moment he hid, his eyes spotted big dog.

How can this dog still there! Is that dog immortal? Cannot die?

“Cai Xi, obedient, I will walk you...”

He felt the voice was so nice, turned to take a look, a girl who approximately at thirteen or fourteen was holding a big dog out from door. At one glanced he had known who she was, pair of bright eyes, he would not ever forget it, it stills that beautiful.

Growing up, she even growing quite beautiful, compare to when she was little, she is thinner, didn't she eat, how could she thin to this point?

Perhaps that dog knew it is going out, rushing to the in front, young girl walking the dog but it seems as if the dog walked the young girl.

He was following at her back, secretly followed, feeling complicated whether the young girl's hand would break because pulled by the dog.

His head still thinking, should he go to greet, and then realization plan that he made those years.

Enslave her, let her to clean and wash his clothes, cook for him....

After thinking, inside his heart there was slightly... Happiness.

Can revenge gives that kind of happiness, it was not clear feeling.

After young girl walked the dog, went home, he has seen her until she went back, at sudden his heart felt empty, he was feeling frustrating when going back to uncle's house, once his aunty saw him shouting at him, "where did you go, wanted to have meal but not working!"

Listened to it his heart felt irritating, but he endured it, because he knew his mother hard-work.

He was a transferred student from county side who came to Shanghai, it was quite difficult, though his study was so good when he was in Fu Shun, must wait half year, still not yet found suitable school.

Within this half year, he was busy to earn money for living, so that he could lighten his mother burden, sometimes he went to see that little devil who stayed at his heart.

Taking look, watched, his feeling has changed.

Especially when he saw her such intimate with her big dog, his heart felt bitter and sour.

When he was earning for living, he met uncle Shen, one good old man, anyway uncle and aunty dislike him, better he stayed with uncle Shen, after he discussed with his mother, he moved and stayed with Uncle Shen, also helped him to take care of the business, he learned many things from uncle Shen, especially about man and woman...

Hence, he understood one thing! Suddenly his mood turned cheerful.

Uncle Shen has many connections, it was not taking long time to find a school that he could transfer to, but must restart from second year, just at right time, the homeroom teacher of second year third class (2-3) was uncle Shen best friend's daughter, sending a gift, thing has settled.

At the beginning he quite unwilling, based on what he must restart second year, he still wanted to finish his education earlier and starting to work, taking good care and support his mother, let her to enjoy good days.

But when he was observing the school, he had spotted her in that school, studied at 2-3, without thinking much, immediately he agreed to restart second year.

On the transferring day, he was standing in front on the stage.

She was sleeping at her seat which was at back row, when teacher was writing his surname on the blackboard, everyone let out surprised sound, she awake.

Two persons were seeing each other.

Kang Yu's black eyes were flashing....

Ou Yang Miao Miao, you won't be ever escape.

Special Chapter : Ge Ge and Fu Ma (The Princess and Prince) [1]



Special Story
Ge Ge and Fu Ma
Princess and Prince

Part 1 (One)

Ge Ge is already 4 years old, she is studying in kindergarten, this year the class is coming one new student, he is one beautiful mixed-blood little boy, blonde hair blue eyes, his skin white, very similar alike western doll, because his dad's changes job, coming to Shanghai, the coincidence is little fellow's father is a pilot, and also Kang Yu's colleague.

The little boy Chinese name is called Qi Yu, he is also 4 years old, his mother is Beijing people, his father is Switzerland people, the most interesting is though he has look alike westerner but he cannot speak English not even a little bit, the reason because is father love Chinese culture, on very early Father Qi in order to learn speak Chinese, he asked the company to send him to Beijing, after he spoke Chinese fluently, encountered with Mother Qi, a virtuous and gentle woman, luckily Father Qi can speak Chinese so he can have conversation with Mother Qi who does not know to speak English, very fast both of them are falling in love, and then married, after one year little Qi was born.

Father Qi thought Chinese as the most difficult language to learn in the world, he is charm by China, so that little fellow Qi surname is followed his mother surname, not only that, because father Qi speaks Chinese habitually, so does not let little fellow Qi to speak English, and also he is pilot so most of time he does not at home, while mother Qi cannot speak English, hence, little fellow Qi only can speak fluent Chinese, it even as good as the standard of Beijing film dubbing voice. English, perhaps his not even better than Ge Ge.

Beautiful little boy is always favor more, moreover mixed-blood, immediately Ge Ge position as the most beautiful is replaced by him, he becomes the focus of attention.

Ge Ge is so angry, but she doesn't show it.

There is one time, Ge Ge is not intended to see Little fellow Qi pee, shocked when she realized his lower part different with hers, but she looked so calm as if not seen anything, passing by.

During night time, Ge Ge is having dinner in her grand ma's house, her

grandma is forensic, inside the study room it is hanging human body diagram (picture) in the wall, the detailed was put above the human diagram (picture).

She took a look, stretched out her hand pointing at something, "Mom, how to read this word?"

Ou Yang Miao Miao was so angry when she saw the place that her daughter pointed out.

She said the human organ diagram (picture) why must male gender why not female, why she pointed out that words, was it due to the strokes?

Ge Ge is well-known to have stubborn character, seeing Miao Miao said nothing, she went to ask her grandpa, asked her grandma, asked her little aunt, all of them shook their head with convulsions, shook their head.

In the end, gave a resentment look at Mother Ou Yang (Miao Miao's mom).

You say you, why must put the human organ diagram (picture) inside the room, hanging country map can't it?

Mother Ou Yang boiling to embarrass, her eyes not dare to lift up.

Only Kang Yu who stayed calm, he completely not surprised, he leisurely enjoy his meal.

"Dad, Dad, tell Ge Ge, how to read that?"

Everyone were holding their breathe looking at Kang Yu, as seen he hugged Ge Ge, he glanced at the human body diagram (picture), he used such calm tone giving an answer, "Dan Dan*!!"

All were silent, head fell to ground.

Ge Ge understood, nodding her head, hugged Kang Yu's neck, suddenly kissed his face, "Still Dad is awesome!"

The next day, Kang Yu is going to have flight to Swiss, Ge Ge followed Miao Miao went to nearest market to buy snack, seeing moving toy ride outside the market, one dollar moving for three minutes, noise wanted to ride it.

"Cannot, yesterday you have ride it, today cannot."

Ge Ge pouted her mouth, her face showed unhappy expression, unexpectedly

spotted little fellow Qi and his mother who were also shopping the market, little fellow Qi looked so happily sitting riding the toy airplane moving.

Ge Ge was jealous.

Taking an opportunity when Miao Miao and Mother Qi greeting each other, she ran heading little fellow Qi.

Little Fellow Qi is playing happily, he even shout loudly: “Fly, fly, fly!!!”

Ge Ge’s eyes are beaming, smirk like a little devil, “Hey, Foreign Monkey!”

This is the nickname that giving by Ge Ge for little fellow Qi, because he and she are born in Monkey year.

Little fellow Qi is so friendly called her, “Ge Ge, you are also coming here!”

“En, I come here with my mom!”

“Are you also coming to play this riding!” Little Fellow Qi is pointing at the empty riding beside of him.

Ge Ge is paused and showing her afraid expression, shaking her head suddenly.

Little Fellow Qi curious, “What happen?”

Ge Ge with he fear expression said, “Don’t you know, this kind of thing shouldn’t sit / ride too long, if not later Dan Dan (refer to penis) will be disappeared!”

Little fellow Qi is a boy, of course he knows what is called as Dan Dan, stunned at moment, his expression changed to be pale, he even climb down from his ride and with tears flowing in his face, running to find his mother.

Ge Ge is laughing devilishly, using her hands and feet she wanted to climb up to the ride, but she could not reach it, cannot climb up, hence she shouted at Miao Miao loudly, “Mom, mom, faster, faster, pick Ge Ge goes up, the ride is moving, it left about one minute!!”

“.....”

Miao Miao cannot lift up her head.

[2]



Finally this project done. This project is taking longer than my estimation but I still manage to finish it. I hope Kang Yu and Miao Miao love story will wrap you with warm atmosphere.

Special Story

Ge Ge and Fu Ma

Princess and Prince

Part 2 (Two)

During the summer holiday, there was one time Kang Yu brought Miao Miao and Ge Ge went to Thailand for vacation, it used the benefit given by the company, at the same flight were Little Fellow Qi's father, mother and Little Fellow Qi, himself, everyone was having good conversation and having fun, not only visited Grand Palace, also watching Thai Show, because there were only Ge Ge and Little Fellow Qi these two children, both of them were feeling sudden surge.

When new semester started, Ge Ge and little fellow Qi are playing heap sands, she spoke to Little fellow Qi, "After looked at this kindergarten surrounding, it's only you who is so resemble with Mei Yang Yang!"

Little Fellow Qi answered, "Ge Ge, Mei Yang Yang is a girl."

Ge Ge irritated, although she likes to watch cartoon (Xi Yang Yang and Big Grey Wolf), but she doesn't have deep impression towards few characters, because the one she most likes isn't the sheep but the Big wolf mother-- the Red Wolf. The Red Wolf (Xi Yang Yang and Big Grey Wolf) is the main star, it is big grey wolf's wife, the alpha female, inside the family there is no other ruler, she used to pan to control her husband.

In her logic, she feels Mei Yang Yang is dummy, careless whether it is female or male.

Once being said by Little Fellow Qi, she is embarrassed, rolled her eyes, "You... How do you know, it is girl, have you stripped it before, no, it's wool, have you ever seen it?"

Little fellow Qi stunned, so innocent, suddenly shakes his head, "No, no!!"

Ge Ge narrowed her eyes, with sinister way spoke, "That's right, let me tell you, actually... She is ladyboy (transgender)!!!"

Little fellow Qi shocked until open wide his mouth.

Ge Ge is satisfied nodding her head.

After shocked, Little Fellow Qi remembered that Ge Ge said him such resemble with Mei Yang Yang, at sudden crying, "Ge Ge, are you saying me resemble with ladyboy, I don't want, Xiao Yu is a boy, not a ladyboy, I don't want..."

Once again Little fellow Qi is crying.

Ge Ge is tsck tsck her mouth, keeps on playing in sands.

Really such dummy!!

**

In the blink of eyes it has already year 2021, the society is such open, the atmosphere is more terrible.

Ge Ge is already fourteen years young lady, a teenager, not only she grew up as beautiful as demoness, her beauty is amazed everyone who sees her, she is not only flower in class but also school flower, her character is alike Big Boss + Queen.

Ge Ge has great body posture, the curves of her body is in right place, although she only fourteen years old, but compare with the same age girls, she is tyrannical (Bossy), every time Miao Miao washes Ge Ge's bra her eyes will flashing brightly.

Finally TM there is something that resemble to me.

At same time Qi Yu also fourteen years old, when he was small he was little handsome boy, after he growing up he is extremely good looking, inside the school, groups of girls like to follow at his back.

Ge Ge sees it as something irritating, but also does not know the reason why, she just feels such unhappy.

In her perception, Qi Yu is hers, when they were kid, he was her toy, moreover he is thing for her to vent her anger, and now he is her free-slave.

Qi Yu also doesn't know why, he always follows her, resigned himself to adversity, if she said walked to east, he absolutely won't dare to walk to west.

One time, Ge Ge saw Qi Yu smiling with another girl, at sudden her face turned dark, she took a glance at the girl, not as beautiful as her, no waist, no breast, really wanted to pinch his ears, asking him did his eyes blind or not.

But, Ge Ge would not do such thing, she wanted to protect her image.

After school, Ge Ge wanted to eat dessert, hurried Qi Yu pedaling his bicycle, sent her to MC Donald's.

Inside the store is so quiet, less people, both of them were choosing such quiet place, corner near the wall, Ge Ge sitting position, exposed her legs, her facial feature about 45 degree, sighed, "Yu, Am I beautiful?"

Qi Yu's face beet red, suddenly nodding his head, "Ge Ge is so beautiful!"

"How's my body?" Ge Ge untie her bow tie, showing little bit her cleavage.

Qi Yu almost had nosebleed, he is normal teenage boy, "So...great!!"

"Oh..." Ge Ge has such sexy eyelashes, and then her beautiful eyes narrowed, "Do you want to touch it?"

Qi Yu is shocked, nodded his head, nodding his head and once again nodding hard his head.

Ge Ge said, "Well, as long as the person is my future husband then he is allowed to touch it, others if you..."

Impulsively Qi Yu, "As long as I become your husband then I can..."

"That..." Ge Ge pulled tightly her uniform, pulled down her skirt, seeing Qi Yu expression she knew he already charmed by her.

Satisfied she having her meal.

Deep inside fellow student Qi Yu not only an impulsive but also excited, he made fist and made a swear.

When I growing up, I must marry Ge Ge!

**

And then ten years passed, Ge Ge and Qi Yu married.

As newlywed, actually Miao Miao could not stand to see Ge Ge bullied Qi Yu, taking an opportunity when Ge Ge taking bath, she talked to Qi Yu with affection: "Xiao Yu, you don't act dummy, don't spoil Ge Ge to rotten, if this keep continuing, she will be lawless!"

Qi Yu is also Pilot, he is sitting on sofa while read his flight schedule, he lifts his head up looking at his mother in law, gentle eyes as if warm water is flowing, "Mom, it's okay, I pretending to be dummy, Ge Ge likes it, as long as Ge Ge likes it, it's okay!!"

Miao Miao becomes speechless after listened his words.

Qi Yu suddenly remembered after Ge Ge taking bath she wanted to eat grass jelly, hurried he takes out his wallet and dash out.

Waiting until he left, Miao Miao looked at Ge Ge who eavesdropping, "Have you heard, still not treating him little bit good!"

Ge Ge's face red, pouted, "I know."

At night, in newlywed bedroom, Ge Ge has thought to treat Qi Yu good for once, showing her most gentle side.

After one hour, Ge Ge who is being torment by Qi Yu in the bed, with one foot kicked him down, roared: "Give you three colors, you are opening dye house,

aren't you? You climbed here, let me show you how I 'tidy you up'!!"

At other side, Miao Miao patting her breathe and talking to Kang Yu who his face buried in her chest, "Yu, can you pretending to be dummy, coaxing me to be happy!"

Kang Yu: "....."

He is looking for more comfortable place----go to sleep!!